

# **THE WAY OF TRADITION**

**Volume IV**

The Holy Spirit Association for the  
Unification of World Christianity

All rights reserved. Except for the inclusion of brief quotations in review, no part of this book may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval systems, without permission in writing from the publisher.

HSA-UWC  
4 West 43rd Street  
New York, New York 10036

## Table of Contents

Formula Course.....	1
MFT.....	23
Witnessing.....	50
Sermons.....	82
Family.....	93
International Marriage.....	146
The Restoration of Heart (Shim Jung) .....	152
God's Nation.....	164
Leadership.....	170
Father's Life Course.....	208
The Path of Abel.....	212
Jacob's Course and Our Life of Faith.....	230
The 25 <sup>th</sup> Year of The Unification Church.....	244

## FORMULA COURSE

---

1. New ownership must be decided. You have belonged to Satan and the satanic world. You have the devil for a father, so you have the devil's world, the devil's belongings, and the devil's possessions. Cut it off! Bring more to God. Bring more of yourself to God. Dedicate yourself more to God. Bring more of the material to God. In other words, ownership must be quickly changed from the satanic world to the Heavenly world.

*Leaders' Address 5-31-65*

2. There are three stages of separation. First you must separate yourself from your satanic environment; secondly, your body should be separated from Satan; and thirdly, your heart (love) should be separated from Satan. So, your heart should be known to God and not to the satanic world. In the Old Testament Age, we went to God by material things. In the New Testament Age, we went to God through sacrifice of our body, and in the last stage we go to God through our heart (love). We go through these three stages.

*The Formula for God's Providence 12-14-71*

3. What is the Principle, and which is the most important chapter in the Principle? The Principle of Creation, and since man fell, the Principle of Restoration. That's what we need and is most important. The way of restoration is the way of re-creation. The 6,000 years of the history of restoration providence is what we carried out by going through the 3 stages: first the stage of symbol, second the stage of image and third the stage of substance. The first being the Old Testament Age, then the New Testament Age, and the last being the Completed Testament Age. In the Old Testament Age the offering, the creation, was in-between as the condition. In the New Testament Age, men were there as the condition. In the Complete Testament Age, it is the core of man, which is love. What does that have to do with the order of the creation? Before the creation of man, God created the angelic world and then He created the world of things, and then He created man. By doing that God wanted to erect the world of love. That's why in the Old Testament Age, God wanted people to offer sacrifices of things as means to reach Him. In the New Testament Age, as in the creation of man, He set up one man, Jesus the Messiah, and through him he would have the people go through the way of indemnity. By indemnifying a man, he wanted to save men. In doing that, God wanted to have the Messiah to save himself, his family, his nation, and the world. In the days of the second advent, the third Adam will come in the place of the Messiah and will

erect his own family on the substantial level where God's love will operate. With him here the restoration on the level of image is finished and the third stage of family will be established with Master and his bride as True Parents. With them here the restoration providence on the image level too is finished or completed and through the blessing of the couples in holy marriage and by his own family formed here, the restoration providence in terms of substance has started. It is completed with godly love as its core. Centered in his family, the families under God's blessing will be multiplied for all the nations and to restore all mankind.

*Master Speaks on Opening Day 1-16-73*

4. In the course of restoration, only after having restored the relationship of children can we restore the relationship of parents or couples, and only after having restored those two levels of love can we restore parental or God's love. Only by putting or uniting Cain and Abel into one we can restore parents, and then God. We can restore the couple and then the parents.

*The Brothers and I 4-8-73*

5. At the time of his crucifixion, Jesus lost all his disciples; even his three chief disciples fled, leaving him. However, even though you may have to die, every one of you should have at least three spiritual children of your own who would be ready and willing to die with you. That is what the spiritual children mean. And unless you have three, at least three spiritual children, you are not entitled to heaven, and you are not entitled to the blessing. After having witnessed to and brought at least 12 spiritual children of your own, then you can choose three chief ones. These are not man-made words; this is the formula coming from God.

6. As for Jacob, during the first two seven-year courses, that is for 14 years of time, he had to go through drudgery in an unknown land. Upon entering the third seven-year course, he had to restore all the world possessions, restore himself, and go back to his original home. During our third seven-year course, I am planning to get hold of worldly wealth.

*God's Day Address 1974*

7. In the Old Testament Age man brought to God material offerings. In the New Testament Age man offered his own body. In the Completed Testament Age man must offer his mind to God.

8. In the process of restoration, or re-creation, the Word was given to man. The Old Testament Age was the period of God's Word; the New Testament was the period of practice based on the Word; and the next age is the period of life fully realizing the Word.

*Let Us Establish the Kingdom of Heaven 1-1-75*

9. Man fell to a level below that of the things of creation so in the first stage of restoration, the Old Testament era, man could elevate himself by offering sacrifices. He could approach God through the unfallen things of creation. By offering sacrifices and heeding the words of God's prophets, man could elevate himself from the unprincipled world to the world of the servant. The Old Testament era was the 4,000-year period of preparation of Israel as a foundation upon which God could send the Messiah.

*The Day of the Victory of Heaven 10-4-76*

10. I must restore the whole world to go into the kingdom, and as individual members you must restore your relatives. You have to cross the individual level and then go through the level of the family, tribe, clan, nation, world, and cosmos. You have to begin by witnessing to three members, and then it will increase to 12, 72, and 84. Only after you restore 84 disciples will you be connected with the foundation that I have laid. Then you will inherit what I will have done. By following me you will be led into the heavenly kingdom. Then you are going to be citizens of the Kingdom of God on earth. As your spiritual children lay that foundation, our scope will be widened to cover the whole world. With this important and serious task ahead of you how can you be relaxed? You must do your 5%.

11. During the first three years you must lay the foundation on the individual level; in the second three years you will lay the foundation for the family level, and with one final year you will complete the seven years.

12. In the course of indemnity, you must be able to raise your three spiritual children so that they will be ready to die with you. At least three very dedicated spiritual children is your minimal responsibility.

13. After you bring three chief disciples or spiritual children, you will have laid the foundation to be blessed and to have your own family. But you must multiply those three into twelve in the course of time and most importantly, you must be united. One of the twelve disciples betrayed Jesus, but your twelve disciples must be so dedicated that they would die with you, and in complete unity with them you must multiply the twelve into seventy-two. The three spiritual children will

be the growth stage, and the seventy-two the perfection stage. That is the course you have to go at all costs in seven years' time.

*Self-Reflection 12-1-76*

14. This course is very clear; we have to restore the lost creation, the lost people, and then become one with the True Parents and establish ourselves on God's side. This is the basic course which you will go, not only on a small scale but on the worldwide scale, even including the spirit world. This is why it is important.

15. God created the world in a certain sequence, and we are going to restore the world in the same sequence. When we examine history, its pattern follows that same sequence. In the Old Testament days people offered animal sacrifices which represented all things. Through doing that according to the Mosaic Law, people of that era could show their faith in God. In the New Testament era man was emphasized instead of the things of creation. Jesus Christ gave himself as the offering and many good men were martyred in the New Testament era. Now is the Completed Testament era God is restoring the True Parents and the true children.

16. It is in perfect accordance with the Principle that the essence of each age is now being developed horizontally. The Old Testament era is represented in the things of creation; the New Testament era is represented in the things of creation; the New Testament era is represented by people, and the Completed Testament era or perfection stage is represented by the True Parents and true children. Now all mankind is being elevated to that stage.

*Leadership: To MFT Captains 3-16-77*

17. With your own hands you will recreate all things, recreate the children of God, and bring forth the God-centered parents. Can you do it? The Unification Church is actually doing it. Fundraising is economic restoration, what we can call "restoration of all things." With your own hands you earn money for God—white peoples' money, black peoples' money, yellow peoples' money, even the money of laborers, communists, and millionaires.

Even though we cannot earn all that is necessary solely by fundraising, that money becomes a condition, an offering representing all the remaining materials of the world. The money that you earn with your hands is not your money, but God's money. "Nothing belongs to me; I bring a small amount of conditional money from the wealth of the world and want to give it to God." In fundraising you accept this money as a representative of God and spend it for God's purpose. Are we doing this because we want to become rich millionaires, or because we want to speed up the

work of recreation, the work of restoration? The restoration of all things comes first, and for seven years we will do this to restore the whole 7,000-year history of God.

Regardless of how people criticize our fundraising we must just do it. The Unification Church members should be able to restore some conditional wealth from the world, representing the recreation of all things. While we are doing this, the representatives of Judaism in the Old Testament Era and representatives of the 2,000-year history of Christianity have come against us. By having this universal opposition, we can accomplish the restoration in a shorter time. I would rather face this opposition first.

By facing opposition, we are realistically accomplishing this recreation under adverse conditions. Opposition against our fundraising and our witnessing is worldwide, with people being very protective of their children and their money, saying, "How in the world can you call Reverend and Mrs. Moon your True Parents? Are you crazy?" Shall we go on fundraising and running factories? Factory work actually has little meaning compared to fundraising, which involves heavenly collision and struggle with the satanic world. As you are trying to restore money for God's providence you are experiencing the deep meaning of God's struggle; God can feel that He is vindicating His entire history through you.

Even though people may give you money reluctantly, by their making an offering, blessings can come to them eventually. Who will receive the benefit of their sacrifice? Ultimately the nation and world itself shall benefit. The money we earn should not be dry money but should be wet by tears and sweat. Only that kind of money can serve as a true offering. When that money is used 100 percent for God then it becomes holy. Usually when people see money it goes straight into their pockets, but we must be different.

Witnessing involves the restoration of the home and family. Adam's family had eight members, and representing Adam's family, Noah's family also had eight members. Jesus had to bring three major disciples before he could marry; together with their wives they would have become six, plus Jesus with his bride would have fulfilled the number eight. You also must restore three spiritual sons. In that way you will elevate yourself higher than Adam, who did not have God-centered sons; later on you will be blessed and have your own physical children, and then both spiritually and physically you will be higher than Adam.

By your own hands you must restore heavenly wealth and heavenly children and offer them to God. Then God will receive them and return His blessing to you, and as children of God you shall disseminate that blessing to the world. That is the history of restoration. You shall be blessed as husband and wife, and together with your three children offer to God all the things you have. That represents the fulfilled history of the Old Testament, New Testament and Completed Testament. Both vertically and horizontally you are making yourself the symbol, or center of that offering and bringing the whole thing to the altar of God then the blessing and love of God will come down. In that love you will live forever with your family and God-centered material things,



both here on earth and thereafter in heaven. We shall be entitled to both kingdoms, on earth and in heaven.

**18.** You can see how the sequence of creation has been turned upside down by the fall. The things of creation are now closest to God, then children and then parents. Where should we begin in restoration? The work of recreation is restoration, so let us think about the process of God's own first creation, which God accomplished together with the angels. Even though the archangel Lucifer became fallen, the other two important archangels are still there at God's side along with the angelic world. In cooperation with the angelic world God made all the things of creation first. Next God created His own children. If those children of God had grown into perfection, what would they have become? Parents. I want you to know clearly that the work of salvation we are talking about is the work of restoration; salvation, restoration and recreation are all one and the same thing. Through the recreation process the realm of resurrection comes into proceeding with the work of resurrection and recreation. God will start from the recreation of all things first, because that is the order of His initial creation. Who should do that?

Man was the one who brought the fall and for that reason man has the first responsibility. Nature holds a higher position than man since the fall, and consequently we must make an effort to become one with all things first. Based on this principle the practice of offering sacrifices came into being, particularly in the Old Testament era. At that time offerings were made of money, animals, and cereal grains, representing the three major aspects of the physical world—mineral, plant and animal kingdoms. When Abraham made his offerings he brought a dove and a pigeon, a ram, and a she-goat, and a heifer; three different kinds of offerings. What is an offering? The making of an offering is significant because it is the process whereby men and the things of creation become one in the sight of God. The time must come when man can make offerings on the family, tribal, national, and worldwide levels, in order to restore mankind as the center of all things. In other words, man's original lordship is restored when the offering is accepted by God. This has been the work of the Old Testament era, when offerings were made on the individual, family, tribal and national levels. That is the way Old Testament history progressed. After that era was consummated by the recreation of all things, or the creation of the unity between all things and man, then man's lordship over all creation was restored. Upon that foundation the new era of children dawned with the coming of Jesus Christ.

As a man who was a child of God, Jesus came upon God's foundation of all things to proclaim man's lordship. Ultimately Jesus became an offering himself, so that fallen mankind could be elevated to the level of children of God by uniting with Jesus. This became the New Testament era. By shedding blood, Jesus literally became a sacrifice on the altar of God. Jesus' desire to see his role fulfilled became his desire to see the day of the Lord of the Second Advent, which begins the era of the parents. By restoring all things of creation during the Old Testament era and recreating fallen man as the sons of God during the New Testament era, the new era of the parents could be brought forth.

**19.** In the usual pattern of your life in the Unification Church, your first three years are devoted to winning your spiritual children. In the three years after receiving the blessing you can receive the blessing of having physical children. Altogether seven years are involved. You each must go this seven-year course in order to win all of heaven and earth. Creation took six days, with God resting on the seventh day. In the same way we must set the condition of working for seven years in the course of recreation. If you cannot do this you are only following me externally, even if you are a leader in our church or one of the 36 blessed couples. As long as a person does not work for his own fulfillment in this Principle he is not worthy of me and cannot truly follow me.

**20.** When God created man in the Garden of Eden, He was assisted by the angels. In your recreation as well, you need the help of God and the angels. An angel is good and pure, but until the appearance of perfected Adam and Eve, an angel is not free to perfect himself. Without the perfection of Adam and Eve the angelic world cannot be perfected. For you to elevate yourself to the position of physical Adam, you must be surrounded by spiritual children in the position of the three archangels.

Now that you are in an area isolated from the satanic world you can create your own spiritual defense by winning spiritual children from the satanic world. With the help of God and those in the angelic position you can bring yourself into Adam's position. Then you are ready to have your own children.

To establish your physical resurrection, you must give birth to physical children of God who can be restored in the satanic world. Those children will serve in the role of your body.

In bearing and raising your pure physical children you are linking the spirit world to the physical world through yourselves. Because the fall of man came in the growth stage you must first restore yourself to the growth level, the position of Adam and Eve before the fall. The perfection realm was left unfulfilled by Adam and Eve. Win the right to give birth to your own sons and daughters.

You can go through the entire process in seven years' time, just as the total creation was accomplished in a seven-day period. In this seven-year period you will go through three stages. First, you have already separated yourselves from the satanic world and are being elevated to the position of unfallen angels. You will elevate yourselves into the growth level, the position of restored Adam and Eve. Because the fall occurred between husband and wife, you must fulfill the level of Adam and Eve as couples.

The third stage of perfection is the parents' level. No matter how great you become as you are restored, you are still the product of the satanic world; you were born into the satanic lineage, and you will have ties with the satanic world which you cannot completely sever. Your children, however, will be born in the name of God, having nothing to do with the satanic world, and they will be the stepping stone by which you will elevate yourselves to the level of parents. The birth of your children is but the first step for you to elevate yourselves to the position of perfected Adam

and then parent. There is always a chance for something to go wrong while your sons and daughters grow toward perfection and the blessing; you must take constant care in raising your children until they are mature and you can bless them in heavenly matrimony.

At what point can you be totally grafted into the lineage of heaven? The moment that you receive the blessing from the True Parents is the great moment when your bonds to your satanic lineage are severed and you become part of the heavenly lineage. Most marriages in the world are not God-centered, but in the Unification Church our greatest pride is that in the name of the True Parents, couples can enter into the heavenly, God-centered lineage. At that moment they become direct heirs of God. Through the blessing the process of the fall can be totally reversed. But that reversal must be complete, for if some tiny hole remains then Satan will dash in to claim it.

*True Parents' Day from the Historical Point of View 4-18-77*

**21.** After a seven-year period of raising your children, you can reach the perfection of perfection.

You must also be protected and escorted by your spiritual children in the angelic position. You need angels around you, and that is why having spiritual children is a most essential requirement for receiving the blessing. They are in the position of angels to escort you, and with them you can attain the level of Adam and Eve before the fall and qualify to receive the blessing.

You must be able to come to the throne of God having completed each of these three levels in your life on earth: the level of restored angel, the level of perfected son and daughter, and the level of having raised your perfected children. These three elements must all be won from the satanic world. Your lineage will gather behind you, beginning with your children, with each of them in one of these three different levels of maturity. Among your descendants you will see every level of accomplishment. From generation to generation your lineage will expand onto an ever-larger scale, from the family level to the tribal level, national, worldwide and universal level. Even though I will be gone, this expansion will continue. Progressing further and further through the years, the realm of your own lineage will get bigger and bigger.

Your destination is the eternal dwelling place of the True parents. My goal is to make all of you true parents. It is the greatest honor that I can give to you. In your own area and lineage each of you is to become the true parents.

**22.** How has God been working to restore this true love? Not just mankind and the angles but the entire creation was affected by the fall of man. Even the dignity of God was lost. The work of restoration means bringing everything that became fallen back into unity with God. God divided the restoration period into different segments. In the Old Testament era all the things of creation

became the mediator between man and God. Why? Everything became upside down because of the fall of man. Originally man was supposed to be the closest to God, but after the fall, things of creation were purer than man, and thus closer to God. For this reason man could only reach God by symbolically sacrificing himself through the things of creation. In addition, God created all things in the world before he created man. For these reasons the Old Testament era was the time in which God was restoring all things. God restored all things first, even before man could be recreated, and then turned to restore His children.

**23.** History records the vertical process of restoration; the Old Testament era was for the restoration of all things; the New Testament era was for the restoration of the children, and the Completed Testament era will be the restoration of the parents.

**24.** Here in the Unification Church we are horizontally restoring the 6,000 biblical years of God's work in our lifetime. Within our own movement these three ages are unfolding horizontally. We are establishing an economic sphere; in addition, we have children, and in the center we have the True Parents. We are restoring all of these things ourselves, and together we are bringing all of them to God as an offering. This work does not yet represent the Kingdom, however; only when God returns our offering to us as a blessing will the Kingdom begin. I am unfolding this dispensation in my own lifetime. After offering to God the spheres of economy, children, and parents, the next phases to unfold will be that of the tribe and then nation., world and universe.

*True Parents' Day From The Historical Point of View 4-18-77*

**25.** I have laid the superhighway of the Principle so that everybody can go, but each one of you must actually do the traveling. In this seven-year period of time you will start by going the servants' path as obediently as a lamb, then going through the period of adopted son, the period of the son, husband and wife, father and mother, and finally the emperor and empress of the universe. You have to precisely cover this in seven years' time.

*The 23<sup>rd</sup> Anniversary of The Unification Church and The History of God's Dispensation 5-1-77*

**26.** According to the Principle, the purpose of a sacrifice is to enable God to determine the ownership or possession of a particular level of creation. Therefore, we come to the conclusion that unless we can make an acceptable sacrifice, from the individual through the universal levels by which God can claim the entire creation, then we will not have the Kingdom of God on earth. The sacrifice offered on the altar of God must be separated or cut in two. The altar symbolically represents the entire universe, upon which the sacrifice is cut into two parts to show that good and

evil are seriated in purity. In order to be accepted by God the blood of the offering must be shed demonstrating that the impure blood of Satan is drawn out.

27. The Old Testament era is the period in which man must make offerings of all the things of creation. All the things of creation were employed for making offerings. The things of creation will purify the altar, and upon that foundation man himself can rest upon the altar. The most important aspect of the offering is that it is not for God's sake but for man's sake. A great distance between God and man was created by the fall, and man is destined to indemnify his way into heaven; thus, offering is not for the sake of God but is the opportunity for man to become closer to God.

God's role is to judge whether a sacrifice is acceptable or not; when God is presiding over a sacrifice He is approving it. It is man's heart in making the offering that needs to be approved by God. Man must be completely united with the spirit of making the sacrifice as a conditional offering on the altar. All throughout history man has made many kinds of offerings, including superstitious offerings, thinking to please God by bringing Him something. That was a wrong understanding.

The true meaning of offering a sacrifice is to enable men to come closer to God. On each level of restoration—individual, family, society, nation, and world—man must represent himself and make an offering to come closer to God. From this we can also conclude that the making of offerings should not be continued for eternity, and that the day will come when man will have no further need to make offerings.

*Living Sacrifice 5-8-77*

28. In the Unification Church the blessing is actually given out seven-tenths of the way up the mountain because individuals cannot finish the final portion alone. Therefore, the blessing is given at that point, and with the power of a loving relationship as couples, men and women will go forward together to the final banquet in the sight of God. That is our way of life in the Unification Church.

*The Desire of God 6-19-77*

29. We know this through the Divine Principle. Because of the fall of man, we lost the love of God, love of man, and all the things of creation. Man himself became the tool of Satan. That is all the result of the fall of man. We will restore all these one by one. First, all things of creation must be restored to God. Then fallen man must become godly man. Finally, the love of God can be

consummated and man can receive the love of God in blessing. Unless you willingly go this route, you can only be seen as a thief who is trying to sneak into the Kingdom.

*Core of Unification 10-9-77*

**30.** Unification Church members should become foremost in that public-centered, selfless way of life.

*The Children's Day We Have Been Longing For 11-11-77*

**31.** We are accomplishing the vertical restoration of history in the horizontal way. Each person must inherit the love of God. Each one must inherit from the Old Testament the love of the true servant and then consummate it, as well as the New Testament love of the adopted son. On that foundation the love of the true sons and daughters can be encompassed. The Old Testament era made an offering of material things and in the New Testament era Jesus as the son was given as the offering. In the completed Testament era we must do both, restoring material offerings to inherit the Old Testament tradition and offering man in the New Testament tradition. That's what you are doing in fundraising and witnessing. The persecution you encounter is an encapsulation of the Old Testament history and you must accept it as restitution. It is a test of whether you still are changeable or not, whether you are really permanent or temporary. Even the communists are irate about our fundraising and use this topic as a forum for denouncing the Unification Church.

Should we stop here because people are upset? If people oppose us we will only do that much more. When it becomes more difficult, we will work even harder. Each person must restore the Old Testament era in his way of life, needing only about two and a half years of dedicated effort. After passing through the Old Testament era, each one must do the same mission of Jesus, which is fulfilled by witnessing. That might take another two and a half years of dedication, making five years altogether. God created man on the sixth day, and in a seven-year period paralleling the seven days of creation each person can enter the era of the direct sonship of God and go beyond the level of the fallen realm. When you reach this level then you are eligible to receive the blessing. At that point you still must go through another two and a half year period, the final test of your absolute loyalty.

**32.** Why is it the Unification Church tradition that even after marriage you cannot have a family immediately? Adam's fall occurred at the top of the growth stage so you are given blessing at that point, but you must still go past the third level. In restoration the two of you must reach perfection instead of repeating the fall. Even though you are husband and wife, together you must love God more. That is how you will fulfill the final period. Selfish and illicit love brought the fall but this time God-centered love will make restitution.

**33.** In your own lifetime you must restore the Old Testament era and Completed Testament era, and before your blessing you must pass heaven's examination. You can graduate from the Old

Testament era by restoring material things and offering them to God, in our case by fundraising. By investing your heart and body and soul you earn the material which you offer to God. Whoever wants to spend the money on his own needs first and give what's left over to God should not even go out fundraising. The person who works hard and even adds his own money, that result, even one penny, is beautiful before God. In that case you have completely fulfilled. I know this law of restoration and I don't like to spend anything you raise; I would rather add my own resources. Your parents may think that Reverend Moon is depriving you of your earnings and slave driving you, but that is far from true.

**34.** The condition for the New Testament era is met by witnessing, giving your heart and soul and mind to restore the people. By linking this effort with your own family members, your entire ancestry will be benefitted. I sacrificed my own family because of this movement, taking care of members while my own family suffered and eventually was sacrificed. That family will be given ultimate blessing, however, because that is God's way.

**35.** In order to save the world God gave up His own son as a sacrifice. To win salvation for mankind you must not only give up yourself but your own family and children as well. The person who is given a witnessing mission sometimes wants to slip away and not go out, but when you go out for witnessing and have to give not only your entire heart but even commit your entire family, trying to do more than any pioneers in American history; when you feel that even in doing that you are not doing enough, then you have passed through the Old Testament and New Testament Eras.

**36.** In the beginning, God, Adam and Eve and the angel together made up the whole universe. Originally these three were linked by love but long ago the linkage was severed. This is the fallen world so restoration must begin at the bottom, with all things of creation. Next the loyal servant must be restored, who was the original angel. Since that angel betrayed God in the beginning, no matter how badly anyone in that angel's position is treated, he must not rebel again but always be obedient. Every member of the Unification Church starts in the position of servant for a while, first fulfilling the position of heavenly angel. The outside world represents the satanic angel and constantly harasses you, yet you must be superior to that. No matter what they say, you must still love God and follow with burning conviction. Just forget yourself and remember the suffering of God. That's what counts. If you will not be shaken and will remember that because of the love of God you are different then you will be surrounded by true love, and while the rest of the world may decline you will prosper.

**37.** When you go out witnessing do you want a companion so you can enjoy it more? How many men did God start out with? How many Messiahs came 2,000 years ago? God sent only one Messiah here on earth, and there was only one Adam in the garden of Eden, only one Eve who fell. There is a deep reason for you to go out witnessing all by yourself.

When you finally bring three spiritual children then your headaches really begin! Often you might not want to deal with those men and women, but you must persevere and embrace them and love them with God's love. Through the first year, second year and third year there will be all kinds of upheavals, but that's the way you can prove that you will not change, that no circumstances can defeat you. In the meantime, you will prove you are better than your own parents or brothers and sisters, and better than your teachers.

**38.** I want you to know that even Peter, who supposedly was Jesus' chief disciple, betrayed Jesus at the end of three years. This test of betrayal is the formula of faith which all men have had to pass through. You must be able to sustain your faith without food and without rest; you have to give much comfort to your spiritual children. If you have food, then you want to give it to them, almost being their servant in every way. You may wonder why you do this but remember that this is the way I went. When you see me now you may think I never suffered, but actually I have passed through the misery at the bottom of the world. I have fulfilled the condition of giving all kinds of service to all kinds of members. If you feel now that you just cannot help but love me, it is because a long time ago I set the condition in the most dramatic manner of demonstrating love for all men and women.

**39.** That is the basic formula and without it you cannot find God's love. When you go all the way to your limit and feel like you are dying, there things begin to happen. When you are so hungry from working without food that you feel almost ready to faint, at that moment things start happening. No one can give you that experience or buy it with money. Unless you experience this, you will not understand. You must feel that you are representing God and that every motion you make is on behalf of God you must put yourself in God's place, walking on the road of restoration.

**40.** Go out in the position of father and mother and love the world and then come back. Gathering a billion-dollar fortune is less precious than fundraising with peanuts or flowers, knocking on doors. You must go out to witness because otherwise you will not know Jesus' circumstance or True Parent's circumstance or God's circumstance. I am still working at making money and still witnessing. If you pass through all these stages then heavenly love will link them all: God's love will come down and your love of God will go up, making one whole linkage.

**41.** Once you go through this condition with all your heart then you shall have your own things and your own children and your own world of God here on earth. By paying this vertical indemnity you shall do all of this. Only after I did all this has God given me the right to own material things in his name. Because I passed through all these stages I can now have a family. That is the result of going precisely the same path, through the Old Testament, New Testament and Completed Testament eras.

**42.** While you are setting this kind of vertical condition you are doing horizontal things like fundraising and witnessing and getting the blessing of God to create your family here on earth. It took God 7,000 years to complete this one cycle, but you are doing this horizontally on earth in



seven years. If God suffered for 7,000 years to make this possible, can't you even do it gratefully for seven short years on earth?

**43.** What is the connecting tradition of all these loves from the Old Testament, New Testament and Completed Testament? The axis is the love of God. You must put yourself in the position of Abraham, Noah, Moses and all the central figures, and love God more than they did. Noah sustained his faith for 120 years, and you must be determined to be better than Noah.

*The Tradition of The Unification Church 12-11-77*

**44.** Jesus stood as the personification or consummation of the God-centered servant. Furthermore, Jesus was the personification of the God centered adopted son, and he was truly the personification of the true son of God. It was essential that he consummate these to be perfected person and love his perfected family. In order to do that he was to marry and create the first family base here on earth, expanding it into society, nation and world, loving that world as he loved himself. After doing all of that he would be qualified to love God in the ultimate sense. Without going through this process he would not qualify to truly love God.

*God's Day 1-1-78*

**45.** Bringing 12 spiritual children will complete the formation stage, 72 the growth stage and 120 the perfection stage. This is exactly what I did. The first blessing of 36 couples became my own tribe, with 12 couples each representing the formation, growth and perfection levels, as well as the Old Testament, New Testament and Completed Testament eras and Adam's family, Noah's family and Jacob's family. On that foundation I blessed 72, 120, 4430, 777, and 1800 couples.

*The Dividing Peak of Restoration 1-15-78*

**46.** Our way of life is the cross of heartle, and heartle is nothing but obedience like a lamb, sacrifice like a cow, and total love like a dove. Even though there are many married couples in Korea, Japan, and America, when I declare an emergency and the martial law of heaven then it's goodbye wife, goodbye husband, and each must run to the front line. The people in the everyday world can't conceive of such a thing happening. We bear the cross of love. My wife's love is important, but for the sake of God it is secondary. First, I am the front-line soldier of heaven. That's the way I live my life.

I bore many different crosses for the sake of the family, the nation and for the sake of God. Some people have tried to use that as a point to attack me, but nothing comes ahead of God. There is notion I cannot give up for the sake of God. Many people regard me as a crazy man. At first

glimpse it seems that I am doing all kinds of destructive things, dividing families, societies, nations, and the world, but we cannot just reuse the old things over and over. We have to rebuild by breaking the old ways down and reshaping them with new concrete and heavenly steel beams. At first it may look like destruction, but in order to make a new structure you first have to level the old site.

**47.** The heartle cross is the ultimate cross, worse than the cross of Calvary, worse than the sacrifices of the Old Testament era. We are bearing the worst kind of cross. The Old Testament era is the era of the physical body. The New Testament era is the era of heartle. These are the three levels. In our own lifetime we will indemnify all three eras.

Then what is our ultimate goal? The first thing that should go is the body. If I sacrifice my body, I will keep my mind, but if I sacrifice even my mind, then my heart will remain. We are going to be the personification of the living love of God, the completely heartlistic person.

**48.** When the lord comes again to fulfill the Second Advent, he cannot just suddenly achieve that heartle level; he must lay the foundation and pay the debt of history, the debt that humanity has accumulated for 6,000 Biblical years. To lay the foundation upon which he can start his journey, the Lord must first pay that debt. Christianity was supposed to lay the foundation of faith and then when Christians accepted the Lord of the Second Advent, the dispensation would instantly be fulfilled. When Christians rejected him, however, he then had to rebuild the foundation from the ground up, going a most tedious and arduous road. Without this foundation being laid there can be no resurrection of the heartlistic world.

**49.** That's why the resound world of the new truth of God is only found here on earth, 'repent for the kingdom of God is at hand.' For what shall we repent? We shall repent to receive total obedience, total sacrifice and the total love for God. We shall "kill" ourselves or deny ourselves down to repentance to receive these qualities.

Are you in a position of total obedience? Total sacrifice? Do you ever complain? I must live the same principle as well. Do I ask one thing of you and do something else myself? No, there is one criterion by which we all must live. There must be one universal, unchanging formula or rule by which God will judge each individual. This standard is what sends one person to hell and another to heaven. This is not my device or theology; this is the formula of heaven, and it will solve the crisis of the universe.

**50.** The history of Christianity is a history of sacrifice and chastisement of the body. In this manner Christianity laid the foundation that Satan cannot overtake. Satan has been hounding Christians, but their true tradition is so high that Satan could never quite dominate them. Christianity has one more step to go, however; the realm of heartle. The heartlistic world, the world of God's original hope, shall remain. The Unification church has gone beyond the level of

Christianity. We graduated from Christianity a long time ago and are in a new era, the completed testament era.

**51.** In the Unification Church our cross is the cross of heartle, the test of love, and we know that we must love that which is impossible for us to love. Some might think they simply could not love a black man. Then God will require them to love a black man. Another might say, "I could never live with the Oriental people. They are impossible." Then God will say, "That's the cross you must bear. Go ahead and love the Oriental people." That's the kind of test the Unification Church is going through, the test of love, for the creation of the world of heart and love.

**52.** The archangel brought Eve to hell, and now there are countless physical archangels trying to bring you down to hell. No matter what appearance a person might have, if you know that he is trying to bring you into heaven rather than letting you go down into hell, that person is far greater and more precious than the archangel. He is more precious than anything else in the sight of God.

**53.** Before I was a husband to her, I was a father to her, also an elder brother to her. That was for restoration. Eve should be restored in that sequence. She lost God, her Father, so she must first be restored to God and her father. Adam was supposed to be her elder brother when they were growing up, so next she must be restored to her brother, then to her husband.

**54.** What is the dispensation of the Old Testament era? In the Old Testament era man had to unite with the offering of a sacrifice. The reason for this is that the realm of all creation is under the domination of Satan. Originally all things of creation were supposed to belong to perfected true man and through man belong to God. Man was to dominate all things, but because of the fall all things went into the hands of Satan. Therefore, good and evil must be separated and for this reason an offering was cut in two. This meant that making the sacrifice necessitated bloodshed. Satan's false blood has been flowing within men's bodies. Strictly speaking, man should be divided as the offering, but that cannot be done. Therefore, animals were offered as a sacrifice and shed blood in the place of men.

For an animal to give up its life for the sake of men demonstrates total obedience. Which animal is most obedient and loyal? The first one which comes to mind is the lamb. When the lamb's wool is taken, it submits with no resistance, and when the master comes with a knife to cut the lamb's throat, it will not frantically run away but receive the knife, cry out once and die. The lamb is symbolic obedience.

The cow, or heifer, is the symbol of giving and sacrifice. The cow gives its skin, meat, and bones—everything—to the service of man. The cow is born to give itself in service. Another significant animal is the dove. One symbolic feature of doves is that they always move in pairs. The dove is the harbinger of spring and is very sensitive to love. It represents the new season more than any other bird.

These animals represent three essential things; the lamb, total obedience; the cow or heifer, total sacrifice; and the dove, total love. Because of the fall, the position of man and all things has been reversed. Man sank lower than all things of creation and in order to reach God man has to go through all things of creation. By offering these three animals to God man is symbolically pledging to God that just like the lamb he wants to be totally obedient; just like the heifer he will be a total sacrifice for God, and like a dove he will have total love for Him. Man's pledge and covenant with God is the meaning of the offering. An offering from the mineral world should be a mineral like gold, that will last a long, long time and will not tarnish or change. We would like to show ourselves as having the same unchanging quality.

Most of today's religious leaders and scholars don't know why God asked the people in the Old Testament era to make such offerings. The Unification Church has a clear explanation. The offering is a showdown between Satan and God, so that when man in the central position makes the proper offering, the ownership of all things returns to God. When man makes an impure offering, the ownership remains with Satan. In other words, if an offering is given in an improper frame of mind, all things remain in the satanic world for Satan would not acknowledge that offering as a heavenly one. The external act of separation means dividing the offering into two representing good and evil.

The ultimate purpose in offering the things of creation is to restore man. After man is restored, we can restore heartle, heart and love. The offerings of the Old Testament era were intended to restore man, but after man is restored then God is looking forward to restoring heartle. I want you to understand that the resurrected Kingdom of God is the same as the restored Kingdom of God. Resurrection is synonymous with restoration. Erection of the resurrected realm from the family level, national level, worldwide level and then heaven are all steps toward the one simple goal—that is, the heartlistic world, the world of heart and love.

**55.** There are three stages to reach heaven. The first stage is the period of the Old Testament era, then the New Testament era, then the Completed Testament era. Of course, the entire dispensation has but one common goal, one heart and one love; all things of creation, man and God must be united into one love.

**56.** The Old Testament is the era of offering animals, but the New Testament era, when the Messiah comes, is the era of offering man himself. By the crucifixion, God Himself as the priest offered His only son, Jesus on the universal altar for the sake of mankind. That was the meaning of the crucifixion. All individuals who unite with the priest and the sacrifice shall be claimed into the heavenly position and become heavenly people. Those who do not recognize it will remain in the satanic realm.

Sacrifice is needed on the individual level, family level, tribal level, national level, and worldwide level. For 2,000 years after the crucifixion Israel was a sacrifice as a nation for the sake of the world. This is why Israel lost its nationhood and why Jewish people all over the world have

suffered. They are the sacrifice. Furthermore, Christianity has also been a sacrifice for the sake of the world and the ultimate restoration. Christianity has seen much martyrdom and bloodshed which was an offering on the universal level, a continuing symbol of the crucifixion.

The same principle that persisted in the Old Testament era was elevated and perfected in the New Testament era. That formula of total obedience, total sacrifice and total love applies to Jesus also. Was Jesus totally obedient to God? Yes. Was Jesus a total sacrifice? Jesus died for all mankind and even his enemies. On the cross he prayed to God to forgive them because they didn't know what they were doing. Jesus prayed even for the sake of the Roman soldier who pierced his side and let him die. We see that Jesus truly died for the sake of all mankind.

*Resurrected Kingdom of God 3-26-78*

**57.** If Christianity had accepted him, however, the worldwide dispensation would have been completed in seven years. Because that didn't happen, the 2,000 years of indemnity paid throughout Christian history was lost and now Christianity is no longer the mainstream of God's dispensation. Just as the nation of Israel was scattered all over the world after the crucifixion, Christianity, if it continues to fail to accept the Lord, will also be scattered, especially by the communist world. Presently many Christian leaders advocate making some accommodation with the communists.

**58.** In restoration at the end of the world God must restore one couple, the perfected Adam and Eve who can say, "God, leave the job to us. We shall inherit Your spirit, Your love, and Your heartistic relationship with man, not only spiritually but also physically. We shall fulfill Your ideal here on earth." Such a man and woman must appear and that will be the beginning of the new world.

*Resurrected Kingdom of God 3-26-78*

**59.** Since the body sinned by illicit, satanic love, we have to let the evil blood out of our bodies. The body is not acceptable as it is, and for this reason we suffer. We use things of creation as a means to reach God, offering them on our behalf, and at the same time loving and uniting with all things. We must love all things because they represent a higher level than our own. We bow down and offer all things of creation as a sacrifice. In bowing down to God you are paying homage to the animals and all things. That is the Old Testament era of the dispensation.

**60.** After the Old Testament era, we move to the next stage, that of adopted son, and approach God through a priest or mediator to offer all things. When you become an adopted son, you are

accepting the concept of sonship, and the way is open to become a direct son. Jesus Christ came as the son of God to open the new era of sonship. He came also in the role of priest so that he could unite with the people of Israel.

*Parents' Day 4-8-78*

**61.** When man fell, creation stayed on its original level while the parents went all the way down and children were little better. Because of this reversal all things were better than man. In the original order of creation, the parents were to be the closest to God while all things were farthest away, but as a result of the fall all things stand closest to God and the parents are the farthest of all from Him. The dispensation behind restoration is to put these back into proper arrangement. Everything must be put in its proper position, bringing man and parents closest to God.

**62.** Originally man would have gone to God directly, but now we have to put all things of creation ahead to go to God before us, and upon the acceptance of our offering we too can then go to God. Restoration is recreation and God created all things first; in conforming with this principle all things must go before man.

**63.** To be saved means to be restored from the fallen position to the original unfallen position, but before you are restored you must make certain conditions. Three things are needed. First is the offering. Second, it must be made by a man in Adam's or Abel's position; that is the position of chief priest. Third a certain period of time is needed; the offering cannot be accomplished in one second or two minutes. These are the three essential elements. Together all things of creation, children, and the parents will form three steps.

*The Day of All Things 6-6-78*

**64.** What does God recreate first in restoration? When God's life, love and blood lineage are established, what would God do? He has to recover what Adam lost. As the result of his fall, Adam lost God's country; he lost all things. God recovers what Adam lost by recreating it. Restoration is recreation and since Adam and Eve lost all things, man must restore them. When God can finally find people through whom He can restore love, life, and the true blood ties, those people are in God's position and on behalf of God they must recreate all things and also recover all lost men.

**65.** God first created all things and then created man. After that He was to establish love with true man. The Old Testament era was represented by all things and the sacrifices made then were for the sake of all things. The creation came first so man must sacrifice for all things to be restored. In the New Testament age man sacrificed to recover the lost people. Christianity spread around the world. Jesus and many later followers died, sacrificing themselves to restore all people.

**66.** In the age of the Completed Testament, however, we have to plant love in the hearts of all restored people. This is why we are bearing the cross of love, which is the heaviest of all crosses. This is why marriage means bearing the cross itself. Unification Church marriage is not happy in the usual sense. The cross of love is more painful than the cross of the body, and once we marry, we find that marriage becomes one of our major works. This is the way marriage is supposed to be.

*History and Our Responsibility 7-16-78*

**67.** I have described the very basic concept of restoration from which all the patterns and formulae of restoration have been derived, forming the path which men must walk. In order to go through this formula each person needs Abel, plus an offering or sacrifice, and a condition of faith. History began at the formation level and proceeded through the growth and perfection levels, or in another manner of speaking, through the servant level, the adopted son's level, and son's level, ultimately reaching the True Parent's position. This is the formula. Religions have pioneered the task of accomplishing each step toward perfection.

**68.** Disciples are spiritual children in your terminology, and they are in the position of adopted sons who would have obeyed Jesus. This formula is never set up arbitrarily; it has spiritual significance which must be fulfilled. The foundation of 3 should be expanded into 12 disciples, representing the family and tribe. Next it would expand to 72 disciples representing entire people or a nation.

3 is included in the number 12, meaning that the tribe is an expansion of the family. 72 is inclusive of 12 and represents the nation, while 120 represents world restoration. Those were the key numbers Jesus had to obtain, Jesus had gathered 12 apostles and 72 disciples, which together totals 84, but that foundation was not completely established in unity and harmony in Jesus' time. Therefore, 84 is a key number for us and in our lifetime we must each restore it. 84 includes all the necessary ingredients to build the Kingdom of God on earth. Whoever fulfills 84 will have done what Jesus could not do. If you restore one spiritual child per month you will fulfill the number 84 in seven years; that's how the standard 1-1-1 came into being. You have not yet fulfilled that criterion.

**69.** The Old Testament era involves offering material things that can be accepted in the sight of God. The New Testament era means becoming adopted sons. The Completed Testament era means becoming parents and giving birth to the true children of God. I have laid the foundation for the Old Testament, New Testament, and Completed Testament eras and installed parenthood and finally completed the foundation for world restoration. Now you are in the position to be welcomed by the world. Your remaining duty is to finish the task by establishing home churches. You are responsible for 360 homes and there you will set the conditions for the Old Testament, New Testament, and Completed Testament eras. You will fulfill those ideals in that small world of your own and I want you to be a true messiah to those homes.

**70.** How can you become a messiah to those homes? You must be a parent first and then have sons and restore the material world. Because of the fall Adam lost all three elements, but now you are given the opportunity to restore what he lost and offer it to the True Parents, who in turn will offer it to God. When God receives it, He will offer it back to the True Parents, who in turn will offer it back to you.

The name of your world is “home church” and it is the altar on which you offer God your three greatest gifts. In ancient times the altar was always covered with blood because the animal sacrifice had to be cut, but now we ourselves are the sacrifice and we have to shed tears, blood and sweat. When you go to your home church and restore all three of these offerings, you will find a true home when you return from your mission. Once you have that foundation, you are a son of God and the rest of the world is in the position of adopted sons. It will be easy to influence them, therefore, because they will already be in a mood to be obedient. Then there will be no more persecution. You will be free to go back to your hometown to restore your own tribe; your home church will be your Abel tribe and your own physical family will be your Cain tribe, and when you head both of them you will truly be king of that world. Upon that foundation you can restore the position of parents. That is the principle.

**71.** The completion of the home church mission will really be your liberation and you will be free to enjoy your own home, elevated in the heavenly kingdom. Religious people usually talk about individual salvation, but we are talking about salvation for the tribe, nation, and world. No one can bypass this. Everyone has to squarely face the mission of home churches. We know the concept of the Kingdom of God and we have precise instructions about how to achieve that kingdom. It will be done through home churches, and this is the completion period of the dispensation.

**72.** It is most important that we can talk about the conclusion of God’s dispensation. Today, on November 12, 1978, I am commissioning you to be messiahs, to go to your world of home churches and fulfill that mission.

**73.** I started talking about home churches last year and now you know according to Principle why I emphasize this concept so much. Do you want to go, or do you want to be pushed? Where would you begin? You will start out as a servant, without sleeping or eating, caring for the people. Then the people will love you and spirit world will come down. If you start out as a servant of servants, then soon people will want to help and spirit world will participate. Then you will be elevated to the servant position and soon to the adopted son’s position. Your people will all want you to come to their home. You would like me to come to you home, wouldn’t you? Then why wouldn’t the rest of the world want to have you stay with them?

This is the way you will become sons of God. You will start out as a servant of servants, but spirit world will come together around you and they will never leave you alone down there. You will be elevated stage by stage to receive the blessing and then become a parent, a tribal messiah,



then national messiah. It may take 3 ½ years or it may take 7 years, and if you cannot do it in 7 years it will be expanded to three courses of 7 years, but you have to go through it on some level.

*The Completion Period for the Dispensation 11-12-78*

74. God set the goal in the Garden of Eden and that ideal still remains. That goal continued throughout the time of Jesus and comes to us today in terms of home church. Whether I remain here on earth for another ten or hundred years doesn't make any difference. I have fulfilled the ideal already and now it is up to you to fulfill through home church. Now is the time for the sons and daughters to fulfill as the parents have done. The criterion is to love your home church more than you love True Parents; then all kinds of miracles will take place.

75. Once the people love you, you will become a messiah to them, and they will follow you to the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. When you are the messiah, those who accept and love you will be accepted by heaven. The home church is the altar upon which to present your offering. The anguished, broken heart of God will be healed when we achieve this goal of home church.

*Critical Turning Point of The Dispensation of God 12-31-78*

## MFT

---

1. If you only lend yourself to the material pursuit of things, you will die so you have to find spirit.

*Master Speaks 12-12-71*

2. Whenever you do anything, you have to have both heart and purpose. When you go out to sell candles, you have to think you are doing this to sell, but also to feel God's heart. You are doing things to restore sacrifices to God's side. You must think that you are contributing that money to heaven.

*Untitled Address on Training Plans 5-7-73*

3. It's only natural that the material blessing is close at hand. Now you are going out flower selling and candle selling. Those who are with heavy boxes of candles may be complaining: "Oh, how heavy these are! I never dreamed of having to sell candles when I joined the Unification Church. But I guess I have to do it." Then, you will try to sell them, but no one will buy them. On the contrary, your attitude should be, "My dear candles, today I am more blessed since I have you." Then you should go out selling with a light and happy heart, as though you were distributing gifts of love with a smile radiating on your face; then more people will buy the candles. Those who will buy your candles will feel as though they have been given gifts. Some will buy more than expected without realizing what they are doing. Try to sell with that kind of heart and attitude, and if you don't sell a lot, then you can tell me that I am a liar. After the flower selling contest the other day, one of the girls testified that she felt like giving the flowers to the people as the gift of love. I felt then that it was exactly what I was going to tell you. This is the Principle. It has got to be like that. Miracles can be performed in this way.

*World Day 6-1-73*

4. Flower sellers, before going out selling flowers, pray hard the previous night and you will see that people cling to you willing to buy a flower.

*God's Day Eve 12-31-73*

5. For instance, you are selling flowers or peanuts on the street, and sometimes you are rejected by the people. You have been called names, and things like this, and you almost cry out. But in that case, the tears are something of beauty. If you are grateful to God and almost happy in your heart because you are doing this for His sake and the sake of humanity, then the merit is yours and God will be proud of you. In later days mankind will have to be grateful to you.

*The Whole and Myself 5-26-74*

6. Put yourself into the position of God. At each moment of battle, God can see it first, so He feels the very realistic excitement. And all of spirit world is bubbling with enthusiasm.

*London Conference Address 11-25-74*

7. There should have been no property which was under the ownership of Satan.

*Let Us Establish the Kingdom of Heaven 1-1-75*

8. Father feels sad for the fundraisers. Even in his heart he cries that they are working so hard. Father feels "If I don't understand that they are doing this for me, I must be punished." That kind of a feeling fills him.

*Directives to Foreign Missionaries 3-20-75*

9. In fundraising, too, if you earn more money today than yesterday and more money tomorrow than today, then the way will be opened before you so that you can go through the indemnity tollgate easier and earlier than others.

*Restoration Through Indemnity 4-19-75*

**10.** When you are told to go fundraising, will you say, “Oh, I’m a graduate student with a MA degree! How can I go out on the street selling flowers? That’s a nobody’s job.” Instead of doing that you must say that you can be the king of fundraisers, the king of the yes-men; to any question or command you must say “Yes-yes-yes!” How would God react? He would be enchanted by you. He would miss you and want to see you.

*Let Us Know the Heart of God 4-20-75*

**11.** I’m having you people fundraise by selling things, but if I were to fundraise, I would be the number one man in that field, too. I’ve done that. I can read the faces of the people and tell what kind of people they are. In my conversations with those people, I can sense what kind of person this is and what he is doing these days, and things like that. The people are astonished, and, in that way, they are drawn to my side.

*Why Father Goes to Sea 8-23-75*

**12.** I have always been convinced that the foremost and most valuable members will come off the MFTs. If instead you retreat after several days’ fundraising experience, I cannot very well use you in the future. You must advance, march on and on endlessly. Young people must hold fast to that kind of great hope.

*Youth Must Have Hope 9-11-75*

**13.** Do you like selling peanuts and fundraising? Why do you do that? I want you to know that it is a great discipline and great training.

**14.** Actually, for many people holding B.A.s, master’s degrees and Ph.D.’s, taking a big box an going out on the street and selling peanuts is in a way far more humiliating than dying.

*Past and Future Generations 8-1-76*

**15.** You are sons and daughters of God, even though you are working like slaves. Do not be discouraged. This is a most normal and sacred responsibility. Hold onto your dignity inside yourself. Many people were enslaved and suffered in the past, but without any meaning. But you are suffering as the sons and daughters of God, and the heart of Heavenly Father is with you. In that dedication and commitment, you are suffering, and your suffering thus has a different

meaning. The suffering you endure on this earth sets a condition to establish God's kingdom for all eternity, and each pain you suffer sets a condition for God to praise you. As a slave your suffering would have no meaning, but as a son of God, the more severe your suffering, the more glory you earn from God. Which route shall we take then? We must take the latter one suffering as the sons of God.

*Untitled Address to Conference of U.S. and International Leaders 9-20-76*

**16.** Those who have not swayed even one bit, please raise your hands. You are greater than I because I have tried to get out of this. I looked for something better, but the end result was that I came back here because there is no other road to go. I know how well you suffer and agonize and that is why I overlook your mistakes and forgive you all the time. You have human weaknesses that I have experienced myself and I understand you. I am a man to be pitied and I deserve mercy. You also are very pitiful people chosen by God for a peculiar mission. We have to stay together and comfort each other. All of us come from different cultures, races, and nationalities, but we transcend all these things and are united in heart. That is our way of life.

**17.** When I look at your radiant faces, I sometimes feel that I am a sinner. I can hardly open my eyes and look at those members who wear very humble clothing. Inside I am crying, asking you to keep on working for a little while longer. There are many treasures to be restored for the sake of the world, but I certainly will use them for you also.

**18.** Fundraising in the name of God is nothing to be ashamed of at all.

*Perfection and Gratitude 10-3-76*

**19.** Many members are on the MFT, which is the very kind of life I lived some years ago. You have chosen this path as your way of life; it was no one else's decision. Since you have chosen to follow my philosophy and my way of life, you must go the same route by facing the same difficulties and experiences.

**20.** When you are on the MFT working hard you may not even have a chance to clean your underwear, but you think, "The day will come when I can get married and then I will wear beautiful clothes and have all kinds of beautiful things." If you want to become that kind of bride and get dressed up and parade around then you shouldn't ask for a man like me. A man like me will never give you such things. On the very day of the wedding, he will take you fundraising and witnessing, all in dusty clothes.

*The Age of Judgment and Ourselves 11-21-76*

**21.** When you fundraise, I am sure everybody has experienced a few people who said, “I’m glad I gave two dollars to you. Come back and ask again.” Since nobody easily pulls dollars out of his pocket, you must be very good salesmen. In many cases you meet people who give only reluctantly, and there are even more scornful people who will not give you even a penny. They give you a dirty look, spit at you and almost kick you, saying, “why is a good girl like you doing that? Go and do something worthwhile.” They preach at you; they do everything except give. The important thing is that you receive this mistreatment from society not for yourself but for the sake of the world. That is my way; it is the greatest way of all. Your own suffering is rather small and narrow, but the purpose is so gigantic and universal. Therefore, it will be rewarded a million times over in due course.

*Boundary Line 12-5-76*

**22.** Even in selling peanuts on the street, if you thoughts dwell on God and humanity then you are doing something holy and sacred in the sight of God. Every blessing will be shifted in due course from those who intend to serve themselves to those who serve others. That’s God’s rule.

*The Benefit and Grace of This Time in History 12-19-76*

**23.** We give and give. In a way, we kill our own ego by going down to the bottom of the misery of man. Fundraising is an exciting way of doing this and witnessing is another. Sometimes you even go to a beggar and ask, “Could you buy these products? Could you buy this candy?” You couldn’t bring yourselves down any further. You bow down to beggars. That’s hard work from early morning to late night. That’s the way you earn fifty cents, a dollar, two dollars, and so forth.

Does this go into your pockets? Not at all, this is God’s money. There should be no greediness, not even a tiny bit. Everything you do, even your sweat and blood, should be offered to God. If a person would say, “Well, I work so hard. This money should belong to me. It should fill my stomach; it should buy me some warm clothes,” that’s a satanic string. Suppose one person earns \$100 per day, then if \$90 goes to the Church and \$10 stays in his pocket, that \$10 will become a chain that Satan can hook onto. You will be pulled to Satan by \$10. Do you understand? This is not my gimmick to make you work hard and give everything to the Church. You will find out how important this is. You must totally isolate yourself from Satan’s accusation.

**24.** Furthermore, you are not only abandoned by the world; you go a step further. You say, “God, don’t worry about my parents, or my girlfriend. If you need my life, I am ready any time. Just give me a little cable that says, “I need you.” The person who does this is going way over the line of the fall, way beyond the satanic realm of accusation. Then Satan has no power over that

person. You are eager to go that way because you are just sick and tired of the satanic influence of the world, and you want to completely cut yourself off from it. So, shall we do fundraising?

**25.** Who are fundraisers? They are not too far from being beggars, maybe beggars' cousins. Master and doctoral degrees from high-ranking colleges and universities are nothing to be proud of when you become a fundraiser. You can't say, "I am a Ph.D. from Harvard. Here's a peanut. Pay me!" It doesn't work. You have just completely humbled yourself. But that's the beauty of it. Even a Ph.D. from Harvard doesn't say one word about Harvard, or about his Ph.D. He bows down, "Could you help? Could you give one dollar?" It's absolutely beautiful in the sight of God. When God sees it, He has tears in His eyes.

**26.** Our young people must know why I have pushed them into such a miserable way of life. Now from this morning on you should know clearly. This is why, even without my chasing them, all the MFT members are voluntarily working from morning to night. They have that realization. They are not working for me or anybody else. They are trying desperately to rid themselves of the shackles of the satanic world. Those who think they will do anything that can get rid of Satan's shackles are crazy in a way. But that is not their ambition. They are greedy to more dramatically give their lives to God.

**27.** Actually greediness is not necessarily bad. When it belongs to Satan it is bad. But once you are on God's side, God's things, God's love, God's life are most precious. Then you should become greedy and more ambitious to get more from God.

**28.** All Christians in the world outside have the same destiny as you of getting rid of the bondage of Satan. They have to liberate themselves, totally emptying themselves. All fallen people here on earth would say. "Oh, sure, I want to go to the Kingdom of God in Heaven. When I die, I want to go to heaven." But there is no way for them to do it until they pay the last penny, the last debt. They must go through the same procedures of giving up themselves as you do.

**29.** There are so many hundreds of MFT members working this morning all over the country. They have every freedom; they could run away at any moment. Furthermore, their parents are in a position to kidnap them. But instead of our members trying to run away, and telling their parents, "Please kidnap me," they are working from morning to night, fearful that their parents might try to kidnap them. Why are they working so hard? I didn't tell them anything. However, they saw the truth. They know the direction and goal, and that gives them power to go on. Are you in truth and light? Will you go?

*God's Day, 1977*

**30.** Let's say you are an MFT member. You've been working very hard, day in and day out, and one day you're so discouraged, you cannot go on anymore. You feel you must pack up and leave. At that very moment, you may miss the most important person, a billionaire with a big heart ready to be ignited by the Divine Principle. If that person came in, he could solve all the economic problems of our church by himself. Then as an MFT member you would have so narrowly missed that one great opportunity.

*Let Us Meet Opportunity Well 1-2-77*

**31.** We want to fundraise here and use the money to establish universities, hospitals, and many other facilities for underprivileged people who have already gone through difficulties.

*To Whom Do I Belong 1-16-77*

**32.** Whatever you do, fundraise or witness, you have one central goal: you do it to become a pious son or daughter of God. You want to become a true patriot in the Kingdom of God. You want to become a saint and holy man in the sight of God. One central, common principle can accomplish all those with dignity.

**33.** I proudly send you out to fundraise; our members sell peanuts and flowers, but there is no shame in that because our purpose is far greater than working for Ford Motor Company, IBM or anyone. There is no nobler heart or more sublime task. Our love for our parents, for our society, our nation, humanity, and God will get stronger, and our spiritual maturity and accomplishments in the sight of God will become gigantic by living this way. Since our motivation is right, why should we be ashamed?

*Word and Deed 1-30-77*

**34.** As a fundraiser, if your mind is parallel with God's ideal and your action is selling, then you fundraising will be a manifestation of the ideal of God. You can be all frowns approaching the people with a most unhappy face, or you can have a shining face speaking for the ideal of God. Even though the external action of selling may be the same, there are two totally different kinds of heart in fundraising. The person of God thinks, "This peanut is really heavenly dynamite. I will push a button and anyone who buys this will feel it explode in in his stomach, making him a man of God. What a great commodity I have!" Your mental state determines the outcome of every situation. If you really think the peanuts are God's heavenly love bombs, then they will be love



bombs. It is up to you to decide, not the peanuts. When you sell, do not ever think that you are the one selling those peanuts. Rather God is the one selling them and they are God's commodity.

*The Ideal World of Subject and Object 2-13-77*

**35.** When the fundraisers get tired from working so hard, heaven can open up and show them astonishing things as they are momentarily dozing in the van. Even in one second God can reveal to them ten years of history or give some forewarning.

**36.** When you fundraisers put out your hand to receive money from the people, have you ever contemplated whose hand it is—God's or Satan's? When you ask someone to contribute, you must bring the heart of God to him and think, "Heavenly Father, this person deserves some assistance from You. Let him give a contribution to me as Your representative so that he can participate in Your work." That is the way God feels.

**37.** All through my life my motto has been to ask for the conquest of myself before requesting the conquest or perfection of the universe. Before you can request dominion over the universe, you must have dominion over yourself. I have even trained myself not to laugh if someone tickles me. Even such a detail is part of my discipline.

**38.** Unless you can conquer yourself, there will be no perfection of the universe. If someone speaks harshly to you, do not try to fight back but fight yourself instead. Do not point a finger at anyone but yourself. Satan does not think about the wrongs he commits but he always accuses loudly when other people make mistakes. Satan always looks for the shortcomings of others, but when God sees shortcoming in His own people He cannot even open His eyes or His mouth.

*The Will of God and Individual Perfection 2-27-77*

**39.** You are fortunate in one thing, however. No matter what hardships you go through, I am one friend who will understand you completely. Not only in the past, but in the present, I am going through the same life that you are leading. When your situation becomes difficult then remind yourself that you are not alone because I am sharing that very moment with you. When you live that way then I will give you the best blessing that God can bring. Do not falter because in going the difficult way you will receive God's deepest love. For this reason I keep pushing you to go on. I know that it is worthwhile because God is exactly like that. We must stand at the same place that God is standing and even now God is going through all these things.

**40.** Sometimes when you are directed to go fundraising, you do not really understand its importance. We have to fundraise in order to restore all the things of creation that have been lost.

Why do we witness? We witness to revive love in another person. It is our duty to reclaim from the force of evil all the things that were lost, and we have to recover the life and love of others.

41. I think the successful witnesses and fundraisers must have some iron shield around their faces and their hearts. Sometimes I admire myself in that way; when I face those who are opposing me I do not feel anything, but I just continue. I am more sensitive than anyone here, yet sometimes I cannot afford to be sensitive. It must be the same for you. You cannot continually respond to all the people who oppose us.

*Our Family in the Light of the Dispensation (I) 3-1-77*

42. When you go out selling peanuts and people curse you, shout at you, and even spit on you, thank God saying, "Father, you are giving me this place to repent because I am a sinner. I deserve to be spat upon, to be hit, to be cursed."

*Who Was I 3-13-77*

43. Do not ever think that rain is a barrier, or that you should stay inside and not work because of cold weather. Can you kill your appetite because it is too cold or because it is raining too much? Likewise, we cannot say that we should not work because it is raining.

44. We have to work longer than the time we spend eating and sleeping. Then we will be successful. We must want to do our work more than we ever desired to love someone in the fallen world.

45. Because of the fall we must offer our economic activity and witnessing to God; this is the price we have to pay for the fall.

46. I can imagine all the things that have gone through your minds—feeling fear, wanting to be transferred to another position, wanting to go to the seminary or thinking how unfair it is that you are still on MFT after three years. But I want to remind you that in these three years you have been recreating yourself, and that life in the world of the heart is actually the most profound. So, no matter how long you are on MFT it can only improve you; that is why you stay there.

47. Always remember one thing—God has never forgotten you. You may have forgotten Him, but He will never forget you. So as long as you are called to go this way, do it; that is the best way for you.

**48.** If we have the confidence to restore all things through fundraising, then we will have the confidence to restore mankind through witnessing.

*Leadership: To MFT Captains 3-16-77*

**49.** When you go out witnessing and fundraising you might sometimes think, “I am not good for this. I am so tired I just cannot go on.” That excuse is acceptable if you are thinking only of yourself, but when you put God in the picture and claim you are universe-centered and mankind-centered then you cannot complain or say you are tired.

**50.** Economy represents all the things of creation that have been groaning in the satanic realm. By winning the economy to the heavenly side by our own hands and our own sweat, we are establishing the condition to restore all the things of creation.

**51.** I cry out in prayer to God pledging and swearing that every dollar our members made represented every penny of America’s great wealth, and that every member that our Unification Church members brought represented the entire population of this nation. “God, honor their effort, honor their success, honor their sacrifice. God, each one of our members is taking up America’s role.” Each dollar you earn must be glistening with your tears; such money is more precious than any amount of money earned in business. Each member you bring must be the fruit of your sweat and blood and hard work.

*True Parents Day from the Historical Point of View 4-18-77*

**52.** When fundraising have you ever been kicked, hit, or spit upon by others? When you taste these experiences then you must think, “this is the path that was walked by all the saints and men of God in history.” Being spit at or hit is not that painful. It is heartbreaking and you have to taste even that. You will finally know Jesus when you experience these things. Jesus had not only external enemies—the people who physically nailed him down on the cross—but he also had internal enemies who betrayed him.

**53.** We are going out fundraising to earn pennies and dollars almost begging. How pitiful God’s situation is! But you must put deep meaning into the money you earn. Compared to the wealth of the world one penny is nothing, but when your heart is resting in each penny you earn then it shall become a gift of extraordinary value to God. The face value of a bill may be one dollar, but not millions of dollars can purchase your heart; when you have invested your heart in that dollar it becomes priceless. When you receive the people’s money and offer it to God for the sake of their blessing, every deed of yours becomes holy and divine. Then you feel such an urgency and

sense of closeness with God that sometimes you just embrace a stranger, and in your heart, you cry out for the people. There have been many times like that in my own life.

**54.** When you are fundraising and working hard all day, you may sit alone by the roadside feeling lonely as you eat whatever humble food you have. In the middle of eating, you may break out in tears. When you put yourself in such a miserable position then you will feel God so strongly.

**55.** Every penny you earn shall go for the restoration of this country, not for personal things. The MFT members are working very hard from morning to late at night, but they have no word of complaint toward me. If it were not for Mother, I would only change my underwear once a week; it is only out of courtesy to her that I change every three days. Why? I know your position, and sometimes you never have a chance to change your underwear, and sometimes you have no time to do laundry.

In the past, I have gone through precisely what you are doing now; you are truly inheriting my path. You and I are comrades with one thing in common: we put ourselves in a position of suffering only because we know God. If we have ever committed any crime, it is that of knowing God. We willingly chose this route; nobody has imposed it on us, so how can we complain?

Are we pursuing the wrong way and bringing destruction to the world? Is knowing God a crime? The whole world is in chaos and communism is expanding because people do not know God. The churches are breaking down. No matter how miserable such a life might look, knowing God is a privilege, and it is the one thing we cannot ever relinquish.

*The 23<sup>rd</sup> Anniversary of the Unification Church and the History of God's Dispensation 5-1-77*

**56.** When you go out fundraising, don't ask God to send people to you and give you your goal. Instead of praying that kind of prayer get down to work and at the end of the day bring God your result. "I had a wonderful day, God, and I offer this money for your purpose. You have suffered so much. You wanted to see your ideal fulfilled right away and I'm going to work continuously to fulfill your dreams. Leave it to me."

*Living Sacrifice 5-8-77*

**57.** When you know the true significance of everything you do then every penny you gather is more precious than a million dollars.

*The Things That Belong to God and the Things That belong to Man 5-15-77*

**58.** When people with master's degrees and Ph.D.'s join our movement, the first thing I ask them to do is to fundraise with peanuts. I am sure they are shocked, "Even though I am a Ph.D. I still have to fundraise with peanuts!" But I strongly feel that no matter how many Ph.D.'s someone has, he will not be able to love mankind unless he can love a bag of peanuts or a bucket of flowers in the name of God. He must feel that he is elevating the value of those peanuts and flowers to the highest degree, and put himself in the peanut's position. Then each peanut will say, "I am loved by a Ph.D.!" and the flowers will feel, "My Ph.D. loves me." That love will restore the dignity of all things, particularly things like peanuts and flowers, which mostly have been sold by beggars or played with by children.

**59.** The Unification church members will love the peanuts as God's creation and love the flowers for revealing the beauty of God. By doing humble things like this you are elevating the dignity of nature and all things which God created. All things have felt mistreated by cruel and greedy men, but now their dignity is being restored as God's creation by unselfish men of God and they feel that God is restoring their true value. The man who loves all things of creation can love God. The man who disregards the things of creation cannot love God.

**60.** You may think it is impossible for a Ph.D. to fundraise with peanuts in the street instead of teaching in a university, but as a son of God I have travelled the road of beggars, not only selling peanuts, but doing every kind of menial task. There is nothing I have not done, and there is nothing I cannot do. I can work in a factory as a laborer or a foreman, or I can come to Belvedere and teach the word of God. I never fall behind anyone or anything.

*Happy Unification Church Members 5-22-77*

**61.** We own nothing. Many of our critics say that I own mansions, but everything is owned by the Church. Mother and I own nothing and I am suffering because I don't have enough money to fulfill God's will. You are in the position to share with this suffering; I have a universal job to do but not enough money. Instead of my giving you money, you bring money through fundraising to be used for God's purpose.

Where has all the money gone? All the money you earned is used to bring tangible results for the restoration of the world. It will never be misused. I have more headaches because I want to match money you earn to the accomplishment of bigger things. You are not working to support me but you are working for the world and for mankind. My livelihood does not depend upon what you earn. This must be clear.

*God Depends on Us Alone 6-1-77*

**62.** Because we are asking donations for this work our fundraisers many times are thrown in jail. You go fundraising not because you are incapable of earning money or of holding a job—many of you could earn tens of thousands of dollars if you held a regular job—but because we chose this route for the sake of the movement.

**63.** We are here to restore all the things of creation back to God, and in order to do that we restore money by using it for God.

**64.** It is your pride to be restoring the creation for God and purifying yourself for God. When you feel that pride then a bag of peanuts or a stick of chewing gum comes to have an entirely different kind of value, becoming a priceless piece of God's property. Every penny you collect goes to the church to be sanctified for God and then used for the world. We can be proud of that. The more you suffer for this noble purpose, the greater will be your accomplishments. God recognizes you more because you do so many things under the most unusual circumstances. You are going out to harvest God's own things and bring them to Him where they belong.

**65.** Fundraising is a noble deed and through it we can share God's decisions.

**66.** We are the people God is dependent upon and restoration of the economy is an important task in this matter.

*Our Pride 6-5-77*

**67.** In looking forward to the day of your blessing, you want to make yourself eligible to meet your future husband or wife. You men must think that through your experiences of selling you are actually seasoning yourselves to be independent husbands who can go out and do things for the sake of your wives. You women are also paving the way to really help support your husbands so that one day you will be ready to become independent couples in the sight of God.

**68.** What matters is whether your hard work is God-centered. Adam and Eve fell because they disregarded God. Fallen mankind has always worked hard, but due to their disregard for God their hard work has not gone to God's side.

*The Desire of All Things 6-17-77*

**69.** Those who cannot be successful on the MFT will not be given special missions.

**70.** MFT members, have you been grumbling at me in your hearts or have you been thankful for your mission? Have you been taking an easy course and always goofing off? If I were

fundraising, I would never settle for reaching a certain minimum goal every day but think about how to get higher and higher goals. I want to work until my arms and legs give up. I don't want to take the time to sleep laying down but instead sleep and walk at the same time. That's the kind of life I enjoy.

71. Sometimes at night I go to the bedroom to sleep for a few hours but only get halfway there, and in the morning I wake up and find I have been sitting in a chair for those few hours. On some days my legs ache and throb with pain, but I just lean against the wall to take a little rest.

72. I want you to know that in MFT training the money you gather is not the major goal. You are training yourselves to be the people who can be self-sufficient, who can create the gas for your car, so to speak. Once you are trained on the MFT then you have basic training for supporting yourselves and after that you will have witnessing training and learn how to win people. I am looking forward to meeting the ideal people that you will become. When you really fulfill your mission on the MFT and in witnessing then not only you can be blessed and have a home and family but you will become the champions who will save the world. If you want to become a citizen of the world then you must raise people of at least ten other nationalities in your own home making it one family.

73. Now when you are young you will visit a great variety of homes and have the precious experience of learning about human beings and human affairs. By associating with many different types of families you can experience many different things which you will then call your own. If you are with a beggar, you will be able to relate to him because you have learned what it is to be a beggar. You will treat rich people in certain ways because you understand them. You will understand the working people and the uneducated people because you have associated with them. By going through every kind of experience you can become a harmonizer, bringing people together from every part of life.

74. Only someone with a wealth of experience can harmonize the nations, the poor and the rich, the learned and the uneducated. I have experienced all these things so I see into your hearts. I was the number one worker in the communist prison camp. I have worked as a miner and even experienced being a beggar. Why would I do all that? Not to fill my own stomach or receive some kind of glory but to offer my whole life for the sake of God and humanity. My unselfish purpose has been clear from the very beginning.

75. I know you fundraisers are going through persecution everyday but do not ever think that you must endure just because God needs money. There is a much more important purpose behind what you are doing, which is for you to become a man or woman who is so tempered and polished that you can become a catalyst of world unity, a person who can be self-sufficient in any life.

76. When I was teaching in Korea twenty years ago, I was pushing the members telling them to go out and suffer, to fast and work hard. The Korean way of life has always been one of suffering

and our members were already tiered, but I pushed them even more until they were totally exhausted. Now twenty years later they come to me and say they are grateful for my pushing them so hard in those days.

**77.** Your MFT work is not just to pay bills. You are leaving an important tradition behind for everyone who works hard and serves God and humanity. Don't ever think that you are working for the sake of the Church; the Church is only providing you with training. The ones who will ultimately benefit will be humanity and God.

**78.** I trust you MFT members and want you to do well. When you are persecuted and mistreated, I want you to feel that you are mistreated on behalf of God and Jesus and the True Parents, and that you should bear the beating of your own children in the future. It is a glorious challenge. You can take delight when people curse you for being a Moonie and you can thank God for the opportunity to experience what He has experienced. There is a profound, mysterious kind of joy you can feel which establishes you as a true member.

**79.** What you are doing now in training is what you will be doing for the world for the rest of your life. The life you are living now is my workshop for you training you to transform the world. After this training you can turn around and do the same thing for the world. This is a privilege because by doing so you are participating in the work and tradition of God. You are literally inheriting His kingdom of Heaven here on earth.

**80.** Sometimes you may find yourself crying when you are missing me. If you are out fundraising and all of a sudden you are struck with such love for me that you start crying and missing me, then a few steps ahead of you I will be standing there, even carrying the same kind of fundraising product you have and going ahead of you fundraising. This is happening all over, particularly in Japan. There are many mysterious spiritual things happening to our Japanese members, especially to those selling the marble vases door-to-door. All kinds of spiritual assistance is coming to them and other members are completely flabbergasted at how much money they are earning. The secret is that God comes down and helps them.

**81.** For whom do you work on the MFT? The clearest answer is that you do it for yourselves in order to become people who love God and humanity. Without that you can never have a relationship with the True Parents. No matter how much we say we love God, as long as we do not fulfill our responsibilities towards God and humanity, we have nothing to do with God and humanity. All the work you do is ultimately to make you the kind of person who loves God and humanity so you can have a relationship with True Parents. Each moment on the MFT is absolutely priceless. How can you be tired and to whom can you complain if your labor is for your own benefit?

**82.** No one can do your five percent except yourself, and you must search after it and liquidate it. When you make yourself God's representative then everything you do becomes God's act. When



you pick up peanuts or gum for fundraising, it is God's act. God has given you a mandate to fundraise and even though you may look like a beggar you are actually God's ambassador. If you fundraise under much persecution then you will feel lonely, but if you win the result with the conviction that you are God's ambassador then it is even more precious. People may not like to give you money, but you have a right to receive it because it will be used to restore the ungodly world. Everything depends on how your mind works. That creates value.

**83.** Life on the MFT is valuable indemnity. There you meet all kinds of people, circumstances and suffering and the only way you can sustain yourself is by making yourself an ambassador of God. It is excellent training. Perhaps you have been in the Unification Church for three years but still you are humbly dressed and externally you have gained nothing. You might even look more pale and humbly dressed than you did three years ago but now you have some precious luggage; you have a package of indemnity.

**84.** Is going on the MFT a blessing or a curse? On the MFT you can meet God. When you go out to the streets with a sincere and earnest heart then God will speak to you. Do you think that you are a wise guy to avoid hard work? No, you are foolish wasting your energy and time. Whether people recognize your work or not, jump into it and bite into the mainstream of the movement. The Bible says that you shall know the truth and the truth shall set you free, and now you know why the Unification Church must go this way.

**85.** Ours is a dream-like task but we are seriously tackling it as reality. After being on the MFT you will go witnessing, sweating, shedding tears for the restoration of man. Later you will sweat and labor for the construction of your family and home. MFT duty or witnessing is a light burden compared to harmonizing one heavenly home here on earth. Perfecting your love in your home is not easy! When you are husband and wife, you may quarrel about trivial things and then you will look back on your days on the MFT and witnessing, remembering how you were really patient to win one person. When you think of that then you know that winning your husband or wife is more difficult.

**86.** At the outset of human history Satan plundered the heavenly creation and Adam and Eve, and ultimately took away the love between God and man. Now we are restoring all things by restoring love and creating heavenly homes. I know very well that we have to pay the historical debt and I know how difficult it is. When you set the condition of absolute obedience then whether your result is good or poor doesn't make any difference. You can grab me and say, "At least I did one thing; I obeyed you unconditionally." Then I have no excuse and God has no excuse. If you love me then how could I send you away?

*The Ones Who Can Receive God's Love 10-1-77*

**87.** Your fundraising is not for the purpose of paying bills for the Church, but for the purpose of restoring your own dominion over creation. You can't think that you personally deserve some of the money you earn. Compared to the rest of the people you are going to eat less, sleep less and work harder. If you want to give yourself totally then you understand the right attitude.

**88.** What you are actually doing is investing yourself to the utmost so that you can receive the love of God to an equal degree. You are gaining something far greater than anyone else can ever imagine and because of that you can be grateful and persevere no matter what degree of suffering you encounter. Every member must take part in fundraising and witnessing. Unless you walk up the first and second floors you simply cannot go to the third floor. Without going this course you are not entitled to the blessing.

*Core of Unification 10-9-77*

**89.** You know who I am and where we are, so you must become tough and courageous. Your power far surpasses the evil and iniquity outside. Don't be embarrassed to go anywhere, and whatever your chore is, do not be ashamed of it. You are doing the most noble task of all. Fundraising is not meant to feed ourselves but to keep this nation and world alive.

*Our Newborn Selves 11-1-77*

**90.** When you are fundraising, whether on city streets or in the small towns of America, you must feel that you are laying the high way for the Kingdom of God on earth, and that after you are gone many people may come freely. Wherever you go, a spiritual highway is laid which God and the nation can enlarge. The more ground you cover, the greater the highway can become and the greater the number of people can help develop it. God will feel great as He watches you lay that beautiful highway, and even the angels will come and try to open the use of that highway for themselves.

**91.** Picture one little sister going door to door, her body tired and aching, selling flowers to raise more funds. When God sees her, do you think He will bless her or not? Will God say to this young sister, "You poor, crazy girl, why do you do that? Go home and relax with your parents and eat and sleep a lot." Or will He say, "My daughter, you are doing all of this for me. I must bow down to you. My daughter, leave it to me. Anything you want me to fulfill I will do. I have never had a daughter giving so totally of herself for my sake. You understand my heart and now I understand yours."

*Our Destined Relationship 11-6-77*

**92.** In going out fundraising, you know that every penny is going for the purpose of God and humanity.

*The Children's Day We Have Been Longing For 11-11-77*

**93.** Are you MFT members walking the street in that spirit? I have heard about all kinds of unbearable experiences of sisters going out and getting no result except scorn and standing on the street corner and literally crying. I let you experience hardship to let you feel the shame that Eve brought down to earth in the fall. In order to restore her sin each woman now takes a position of being exposed to shame. It is only through single-minded devotion to God that she can still go on, and in that way she can prove that she is a worthy and honorable woman. On MFT money is secondary. The most providential reasons come first: restoration of the honor and dignity of men and women.

*Renewed Pride 12-4-77*

**94.** We have the responsibility to share the love that comes from heaven. Representing every race and all the people of the world, you were handpicked by God to distribute His love. God always works to set anything up conditionally in the beginning, and in our case you are conditionally spreading God's love when you go fundraising with peanuts and flowers and chocolate.

**95.** Some people may misunderstand us but eventually they will know our true motivation and they will bow down knowing that we are truly doing unselfish things for the purpose of God. People test you Moonies when they accuse you but then they find that you are strong and firm inside, not boneless like jellyfish. You are not just talkers or salesmen but you have something solid inside, something that they can feel is bigger than themselves. You are individuals who can look straight up to the future, who know the present and also the past. People will see in you the hope of the universe because you are representatives of God. After all the kinds of suffering you have gone through, people would expect you to look tired out, but instead they see that your eyes are shining and your posture is confident.

**96.** Is pushing you out for fundraising right or wrong? If you really love to tackle that mission more than you like eating and sleeping and loving, then by doing it you will discover a far greater love than you ever knew. I want you to have that gift. When you apply yourself in your mission more than you love eating and sleeping and loving then you will inevitably discover a new world of genuine love and value.

**97.** It doesn't make any difference where you go. You can go to the dungeons of hell and still have spring all around; I will be there with you and God will be there with you and you will never be alone. Spiritually I will take you by the hand and lead you in each direction. That discovery of new value and the sense of permanent love cannot be found in a comfortable classroom. That kind of experience can only be obtained through actually knocking on the door of the Harlem's of this world. By that experience alone can you taste love, which is why I am pushing you out.

**98.** The MFT experience will give you basic training for dealing with all kinds of people. Even without your realizing it you are becoming the best diplomats with a sixth sense about people. This is formidable training which is impossible to get in any other way. MFT is really your most difficult task. A person's money usually stays way down deep in his pocket and doesn't like to come out but you are trying to talk it out! It really takes a concerted effort to move a person's heart.

**99.** In meeting you, a person might momentarily feel closer to you than to his own wife. You can make such a deep impression upon him in the shortest possible time because you can analyze a person. Instead of wishing that you hadn't approached him to donate, he will think, "I wish you could be my own daughter;" or "I wish you could be my own brother. What a wonderful person." If you meet that same person a second time you know that he will greet you first. He might say, "I'm so glad to see you again! Shall I buy again?" You might use wonderful diplomacy and say, "You already donated once so you don't have to give again;" but if he insists then you tell him, "Well, if you really want to help then you could give a substantial donation and get a whole case."

**100.** When you come back with a good result at the end of the day, instead of being proud of how much money you have you must be jubilant that you could distribute more of God's love. Then secondly appreciate the money coming in. You must look at the merchandise you carry as being containers of the love of God. If you have candy and think of it as the love of God, would the candy be happy? If it has a personality, the candy will feel, "I want to be eaten by a man who appreciates the love of God in me as much as the person who sold me." The candy wants to be possessed by such a person, and would even say, "If he doesn't eat me himself then I want to be eaten by his loved ones."

**101.** If the person truly appreciates the candy then it will not just be candy but a tonic for good health. Two purposes are being served. First, it gives joy to man by giving love, and second it brings joy to God. Does that make God joyful because God loves money? No, in the sight of God it is not money; it is the appreciation of His love. When you raise funds and come back with result you must pray and offer that money to heaven, saying, "God, these people appreciated Your love and received it. Would You remember them and add Your blessing to their homes?" Indeed, God will respond to you and His blessing will go to every home which gave that money.

**102.** You are like God's water holes offering the water of God's love. Would you like to be a pipeline the size of a finger, or as big as a giant water main? Would you just stand still or be

energetic and actively embrace the world? You know the answer, but knowing it is one thing and doing it is something else.

**103.** Please take it seriously and do not feel that you are being used. If you willingly go that path you will discover new value and meet God there. How many of you have really walked down the street in the heart of God, and how many tears did you shed on behalf of God? Someone might mistreat you, but forgive them and come back with hope. Next time you visit him you can have hope that he will be a new man and treat you differently. You are always being deceived by people, but always be their friend anyway.

**104.** Even though you are always being deceived, people will become different with time, know that the power of God is there, that God is not leaving you alone. If you have that much forgiveness and generosity and prayer, but still the other person doesn't repent then don't worry about him. Spirit world will come down and chastise him.

**105.** When you feel you cannot stay here anymore because it is too hard and you can't stand it, then all of a sudden you will find something more attractive outside, perhaps someone who will ask you to come with him. Many women are captivated by their own beauty and when they look in the mirror they admire their nice complexions and slim figures. When they are confronted with MFT mission they are horrified and insist they need beautiful clothes and nice things.

*The Tradition of the Unification Church 12-11-77*

**106.** Do you know why we have the MFT? The Unification Church is always doing impossible tasks, like fundraising and witnessing, and these things will teach the white people in our movement the power of endurance. By receiving humiliation while fundraising they will become tougher and never easily give up in the future.

*God's Day 1-1-78*

**107.** When you are fundraising, I know you sometimes feel, "Why do I do this?" Furthermore, at times you are lucky and people donate but sometimes they treat you scornfully. I push you into that position because that is your training. You must know how to evaluate people. You meet all extremes of people out there, including those who are very unkind and make you feel miserable, but you also meet people who appreciate you and inspire you, exclaiming, "We need more people like you in this country!"

**108.** If you just meet good people then you don't realize their value, but when you have met both extremes and then you meet a godly man your heart is so moved that tears fall down your face.

God is always like that person; you can meet God through that person. When you meet a cruel man who accuses you, but you pray for him with tears instead of yelling back, asking God's blessing upon him, then God will feel sympathetic with you and will bestow blessing upon you. By your prayerful act you are bringing yourself closer to the bosom of God, and you can hear His whisper, "My child, you are truly mine and I am here with you, embracing you." The MFT members face the two extremes every day without complaint, always tasting the tears of God. In doing that they are bringing themselves closer to the bosom of God.

*All Things Depend On Us 1-8-78*

**109.** So far, we have tolerated being beaten and criticized and persecuted, but the time has come to counterattack and educate people. We have to show them right and wrong, good and bad. What's wrong with fundraising? You are clearly not doing it to buy your own meals. You are doing it for the work of God. If you are a college graduate, show them your diploma. If you have a good family history, show the people that you are not just an outcast of society. You are decent, righteous, goal-oriented young men and women.

**110.** The other day a fundraising member came to my car and asked for a donation. He had a big ID card on his coat that said, "Unification Church" and I liked that very much. You have guts when you wear your ID. Open up and show what you are. God has written our ID cards, and if you are trying to hide anything, it actually means that you are trying to hide from God and the spirit world. That is impossible! From whom are you going to hide then? Nobody.

*The Dividing Peak of Restoration 1-15-78*

**111.** MFT is almost intolerable at first, but after certain habits are formed a person doesn't want to leave. Even when such a person has a holiday, he automatically finds himself going out to fundraise after breakfast is over.

**112.** One thing is true; if you are truly a slave of the love of God then you are the happiest person under the sun. That has been my own goal. Whether you are a laborer, merchant or dock worker doesn't make any difference. Ultimately men's hearts crave being slaves of God's love. I am pursuing the same goal, and I want to be the number one slave of God's love. Even though your hands are raising funds with flowers, they are working for the noble purpose of God's love to save this world. Your arm is God's arm, and God is using it to recreate this world.

*The Will of God and Thanksgiving 2-12-78*

**113.** People are reluctant to go on the MFT, and even I don't like the MFT. You don't welcome bitter medicine, but you know the necessity and benefit of it and that benefit is why I push you.

**114.** I pushed men and women equally to the MFT, but the women always become the champions. You women are really my allies. What you look like doesn't matter; you might have prominent lips or beady eyes or a sharp nose, but that doesn't make any difference. I look at your heart, and as long as you are obedient, you pass. I will not decide by external appearance who should be in the heavenly museum because it is decided by your spiritual qualities.

*Sorrow and Tears 3-1-78*

**115.** When you go out on MFT training, all the money you make is for the public fund and for that reason you should return every penny you make. But at the same time your doing that makes you a public person, and anyone who is nasty to you and slanders you is violating this law and they will be chastised. Because you are a public person, because every bit of what you are doing is for the sake of God, fundraising is not stealing, not at all. Some people try to criticize us by saying that Unification Church members lie and justify it by calling it heavenly deception; I never taught you to do that, and I was very angry at hearing such a thing. We don't have to lie. We must be totally honest.

**116.** Some members try to hide the fact that they are members of the Unification Church and that is absolutely no good. Wear your ID and show to the world that you are a member of the Unification Church and that you follow Reverend Sun Myung Moon. Go forward proudly in that capacity and let people contribute to this cause. If someone slanders you when you are a public person then it is the other person who is violating this law and who will be cursed. Therefore, you have to have mercy upon them and tell them to wait and see during the next three to five years. Go out with my dignity.

*My Life 3-12-78*

**117.** Fundraising is difficult to do, and you are sort of ashamed if you meet old classmates or relatives when you go newspaper selling. If you feel that, remember that it is only your body complaining to your mind. Your body has to submit to the mind, but once you win over that situation you won't have to go through that trial anymore.

*Where God Resides and His Course 3-19-78*

**118.** When you are fundraising you usually accumulate many coins and your pockets sag with their weight; when you take them out it is as if they are diamonds. This is the kind of value you are receiving from your work. This is the secret reason why I push you so much. In this way I can help you to receive more blessings and deserve even more in the Kingdom of Heaven. When you apply, you will have to be accepted there. Do you know I am telling you the truth, or am I really only trying to make you work?

*Resurrected Kingdom of God 3-26-78*

**119.** It is hard for ordinary human beings to go door-to-door fundraising, but you do it anyway. Persist, penetrate, and march forward and your root and branch will be the ideal branch for the whole world. We can easily declare to the world that we will possibly be the worldwide branches, roots, and beautiful flowers to save the world.

*Spring 4-16-78*

**120.** Fundraising is not primarily a money-raising activity, but a method of significantly separating good from evil. According to how people respond to our fundraisers, God has a great chance to see who is good and who is evil. Those who support our fundraisers will be given credit for helping God directly.

*Yesterdays and Today 4-30-78*

**121.** Eventually your fundraising will help to free all of hell, including God. Are you aware of that? It is a solemn and sacred activity. You have to be confident of that. Because world unity is our objective, let there not be a shadow of a doubt that everything we do is important.

*Heavy Burden 5-7-78*

**122.** At first the members didn't see too much meaning in selling peanuts and flowers but gradually they came to understand why they were doing it and now they can easily disregard the negativity of the people they meet. People are sometimes so impressed that they give all the money they have in their pockets.

*The Age of New Dispensation 5-14-78*



**123.** Our fundraising activity is done with genuine heart. We know our purpose-we do it for the rest of mankind, parents and for God. If we do it with more heart and dedication than worldly people who are earning their own salaries, then Satan has nothing to accuse us of because he knows that this money is eventually being spent for all people.

**124.** God is in the parental position and if Reverend Moon is in the Abel position then you Church members are in the Cain position and you belong to the world. As the ones who are physically in the position of the offering, if you will become completely one with the chief priest in the Abel position, and never separated from him but be obedient like a lamb, then we will be accepted by God. This is exactly what you are doing. You go out to fundraise with great heart and dedication because your only desire is to be accepted by God. We are now gathering and preparing the offering. In this way all things, children and parents all go everywhere together. One stays with the other.

**125.** What happens when we fundraise and we decide to keep the money for our own individual purpose? Then there is no way of escaping Satan's blame, and everything we gathered will all return to him.

*The Day of All Things 6-6-78*

**126.** Always when you have tried your best in witnessing or fundraising you are tired when coming home at night, but you must find some time to pray to God and cry for mankind.

**127.** When you fundraise, you are not collecting money but planting a seed of love everywhere you go. When people open their doors and receive you, then the seed of love will grow in that house. Now you know that love is the only thing that makes unity possible.

**128.** A heavenly "beggar" has a sense that his responsibility is to send many rich people to heaven persuading them to give alms to the poor. He doesn't care whether the rich know why they should give things away to others, as long as they do it and can go to a good place in heaven. Getting donations from people is most difficult, but once you move their hearts they are very generous, and by doing so they receive some blessing. It is good for you and good for them.

*The Path of the Chosen 7-9-78*

**129.** We go out and fundraise with peanuts and chocolate but in the future the whole world will depend on us, and if we don't do anything then the world has absolutely no chance to survive. After realizing that, you can have the real feeling that each box of candy or bag of peanuts is stronger than an atomic bomb because it will make a dead man live once more. No matter how many atomic

bombs the world may explode, nothing really changes because they have nothing to do with life, whereas the bag of peanuts you are selling is bringing each person one step closer to heaven.

*History and Our Responsibility 7-16-78*

**130.** Would money like to follow a bad man or this kind of man? Actually, money must chase after a person; a person cannot chase after money and be successful. You have this experience yourself: a person may not be happy to give you a donation, even frankly saying something bad to you, but then his hand dips into his pocket and brings out some money! Likewise, many mouths speak against me, but those people still bring out money to give. Then they think, "I decided I wouldn't give, but I just did it again!" Upon seeing that, God is happiest and Satan the most miserable.

*We Who Have Been Called to Do God's Work 7-23-78*

**131.** Now you are fundraising and you don't have any fame or fortune so they try to impose their will on you, but once your foundation is laid even your father and mother will have to listen to you.

*Perseverance and Contemplation 8-27-78*

**132.** Making money is difficult so we adopt the rock-bottom level of human existence and in that way raise money to be used for God's work. Doing that is the best way to overcome individualism. Fundraising and witnessing are the standard Unification Church ways to clear away any undesirable traits.

**133.** We have to fundraise so we can get rid of individualism.

*The Age of Repentance 9-1-78*

**134.** The person who is intoxicated in the love of God automatically feels great joy and vitality. The experiences of MFT and witnessing are tough ones, but through each you can experience that realm of closeness to God and His love. That's why I push you out. I have never asked you to live an easy life.

**135.** Everyone is in the habit of thinking about "my things;" but on the MFT there is no concept of "mine:" Everything is God's. All day long the fundraisers earn money, but they have no concept of this being theirs anymore. When you empty yourself everyday then that much love of God can fill your heart. The greater the tribulation, the greater the blessing that follows, but many times you don't remember this and then complaint comes.

**136.** Not a single MFT member will feel he has done enough, that no one can beat his record. No matter how hard our members work, at the end of the day they feel, "Father, I am sorry I have not done enough. Tomorrow will be better." They know they cannot beat my record. It may sound like a sad way of life, but really it is a blessed way of living.

*Mainstream of the Dispensation of God 11-19-78*

**137.** To the person who donates, his dollar or five dollars may seem very insignificant, but that money is spent for the sake of national salvation. Because of that purpose you have brought blessing to that giver.

*Breaking the Barrier 12-10-78*

**138.** People might look at your humble dress and pale faces and think you are really wretched people who do nothing but work all day on MFT or knocking on people's doors. Externally they might see that, but inside the motor is running and you have a big heart going after true love. Nothing under the sun can compare with the value of your heart. You should have pride; even though you may not be the most beautiful kind of person physically, you possess true burning love centered upon God. You are princes and princesses of love and of heaven, and you shall have such a person as your husband and wife.

**139.** The work of MFT is nothing compared to the consummation of true love. Being criticized and cursed, getting no sleep and going hungry is nothing compared to the journey you are going to make. When you are angry at someone who has scorned and spit at you, then remind yourself, "I am going to obtain the kingship of the love of God." When you remind yourself of this highest possible goal, there is nothing you cannot endure. When you see that goal, then you can endure. Do you want to try? It is very difficult.

*Spring Season of the Providence 4-1-79*

**140.** You are soldiers seasoned from MFT training, learning how to evaluate all circumstances and how to win someone's heart. You may not have anything in your pocket or in your bank account, but you know how to cope with the world. The training you are getting here will never be obtained at any university.

*The Trust Placed in Us 6-3-79*

## WITNESSING

---

1. When you witness to other people you must feel actually as if you are seeking your own lost children. Therefore, when you find them, you must serve them as a servant, but with the heart of a father. It was God who has been seeking us. We must seek people with a father's heart. In that way you can feel and experience the heart of the Father. You must shed tears and sweat and blood for those people to truly make them your own children. Your spiritual children will not be obedient and gentle to you at all in the beginning. They will be most satanic and rebellious to you. Then you will know how the Father in heaven must have felt. You will make indemnity very quickly in raising and loving the unlovable. This is the way God lets you know the heart of the Father. When you feel bitter or sad with your spiritual children, always think of God who has suffered even more than you for your sake.

2. It is good for you to pay indemnity because Satan always strikes others first. Heaven is the reverse. Heaven would allow you to be stricken first, and then you can strike Satan. This is the love of God. Then Satan cannot accuse you even though you take people from him because he struck you first. But don't try to pay indemnity before you approach someone, because when you find someone who is conscientious and good, your heart will automatically turn toward him. You will feel responsible for him, and then you should pay indemnity. But sometimes you will feel completely shut off when you approach one who is not ready at all. Your indemnity would be endless if you paid for them. Approach people first and judge their response. If they are responsive do your best. Spending a great deal of time on an evil person is a loss for God. It is better to lead two good persons quickly. Don't waste your time when you get no response. Our members are constantly seeking people wherever they go. This is exactly what God is feeling and doing. Those who do this are closest to God because they share the same nature.

3. By witnessing or working for this cause alone, you can find the value of the message. As you understand the message more and more, you will know how to apply it to your daily life. You will realize what a wonderful change has come about in you. A reformation or recreation of life will occur within yourself. If this message can transform you, it can transform everyone. It can transform the whole world. In that way you will understand how to apply it to life, to the lives of people in order to remake them. In that way you can use the message. As you teach others you learn more. As you teach and come across questions you still struggle to learn. Then through your intuition the questions will be answered. You learn more and more as you teach others. If you sincerely teach others, you will naturally live what you teach. One does not teach from intellect but from life. The more you teach, the more you learn and realize the value of the truth. Then naturally you will long to see the people within the truth, the people who live the truth. You miss them and long to see them. Spiritually you become closer and closer to them even though physically you may be apart. But you feel and realize the union in spirit with them. Because this

is a living truth, the real truth from God, this truth unites good people, people of truth. They feel like real brothers and sisters even though they have never met. Do not wait until you understand all of the Principle. Start teaching immediately as much as you understand now. Then you will understand more and more. The spirit world will help you to understand through dreams, through visions or through other people.

*Leaders' Address 3-1-65*

4. As much as you desire to live with the Lord and have him accept your soul, you likewise desire to have the world transformed by restoration. You associate your own interest with the interest of the world. Your intensive compassion goes to the world bringing God's kingdom here on earth to humanity.

5. Use your longing, your desire, your love for the Lord in the salvation of all humanity, including even the most miserable people. You must go to the miserable and love them as much as you love the Lord. You must love your fellow humans with the same intensity you love the Lord. Love both with a single love.

*Leaders' Address 3-12-65*

6. Adam and Eve left God shedding tears of sadness. But they should have become one being centered on God's love. Then they would have been able to cry tears of joy and function as the central example of God's will for all their descendants. They would have been the Messiah and there would have been no need for a savior. Hence, these three steps we will see repeated throughout history:

(1) Man must come away from evil and be in the position to receive God's love.

(2) Man must shed tears for God and His sorrow and

(3) Man must shed tears for his fallen brother and make sacrifices for his brother's salvation.

*Sacrifice-the Historical Formula for World Restoration 12-21-71*

7. You have to study what might be called "living man" philosophy. Always think, "how can I attract this person to me or to you." Let them be drawn to you. There is only one method for doing this Father found out. That is the spirit of serving that person. Human nature is such that whenever there is a reward or gift coming to a person, then he will go in that direction. The person

you are contacting is receiving the gift and you are giving. Then naturally you will attract one another. When you are going to do something to take advantage of the person, that is an obstacle. But in serving the person you are brought closer together. Through this method you can teach everything. You have to have firm faith that witnessing is not done for oneself.

**8.** The problem is how much energy you can use to save that person, how much can you give to reach that person. That is the key point in our work. By doing this you will see the heart of God, how much energy He put out to Adam and how much energy He put out to restore Adam. With you, centering on one person will be the same. Even if you don't give all your energy to this one person, you have to be determined to say, "I will do my best along this line." That is the attitude you should have in mind. Also you will know the tears of joy that God knew when He found Adam again. You will sense this divine heart. Then when you go witnessing and meet someone, you should feel the same tears of sorrow or love which God felt for one person. You should try to experience that kind of thing. Then the two of you will cry tears of joy when he returns to God. The person will remember eternally the time of sorrow, the time of joy and the time of pain. In that situation you can influence him more than anyone in that person's past, and you will be remembered forever and will have an eternal effect on him.

**9.** In those situations you have to give more help than any of his friends can give. When he is in a joyful mood say something that will suit his mood. And when he is worrying about troubles, you give him comfort. Consider this kind of conduct when you are witnessing. With this kind of relationship human beings are interwoven.

**10.** We cannot use the compulsory method. One way we can use is to find out if they will accept our role, persuade them that there is no other way for them to follow, except to go along this road with us. How are we going to persuade them that we are on their side? In other words, we have to let them recognize that we are on their side; their friends when they are under sorrow, pain, turmoil and so forth. The person will move and come to us when we persuade them that we will share their sorrows, pains, tortures, and problems. There is no other way to let them move toward our side than to persuade them that we are suffering for them. We have sorrow on their part, we are sharing their problems and tears and sorrows.

**11.** His desire, His hope and His heart is to have you go out into the world. When you are with God, He will let you come down, come back, instead of staying with Him, come back to this world and bring home more members. Then He wants you to come back again and multiply these members. In the dispensational course, we cannot use the compulsory method. He or she has to come along this road with willingness. In order to bring success as I have mentioned, we have to serve, we have to love the person more than anything. We have to sacrifice, we have to share their tears, and their burdens.

**12.** Separation from Satan starts as soon as the person realizes you are willing to give your very life for him. From there he begins to reject Satan. Risking your life, you are saving one life, one soul. The religious worker must love God, mankind, and the world. Even if opposition comes, they must be ready to give their life.

**13.** As a religious person grabs a man, Satan pulls harder. In order to bring success of holding power by a religious leader, it should be more powerful than Satan's hold. You have to serve, sacrifice and risk your life to produce more power than Satan's. This is a law of the Principle. Only this method works.

*Master Speaks 1-14-72*

**14.** Have you ever been so serious that you think that a person's life or death is in your hands? So, when you want to speak to that person, you are really serious and you almost tremble before God to think that there is the possibility to fail this person. Then you will be doing right. At that moment you must pray to God, "Help this person from your part, but use me as an instrument to love this person. Save the life of this person. All is in your hands, all in your hands. So, please use me to do your job." When you are that serious, God will be working with you. Even in the work of recreation, God must work with you, because you alone cannot do anything.

*Opening of the Training Session 12-9-72*

**15.** If you are going to be the lover of the people and of the whole world, if you are so sacrificial as to give your whole life, the people will be willing to come to you on their knees. Then you will be loved by the people and loved by God.

*Master Speaks on Opening Day 1-16-73*

**16.** God being invisible cannot carry out things as He would want to in a sense. He is always ready to give all this to the people, but they are not ready to receive those things from God. In that case you are used as the instrument. Through you He is giving things to mankind; through you He is working to make the world good; without you He cannot do anything. You are in a way a mediator between God and man, and without you God cannot be interrelated with people.

*Our Desire 1-23-73*



**17.** When you witness to a person, don't ever dream of gaining anything from him. You must be ready to give out things—you are going to lose everything. You are going to give at the sacrifice of yourself.

**18.** You can reversely think of that person as your liberator, because without him you would have no way to repay your debt to God and to Father. "I am indebted to God on the individual level, family level, national level and universal level. But I am going to repay that debt to God by serving that person." The person is so dear to you, the family, and all are so dear to you because without the family, nation, clan, and whole universe you have no way to repay God. When you think of things in this way, your witnessing to other people is the way you repay your debt to God. When you want to repay the debt, would you do that unwillingly? You must give at least your heart to that person, to repay that person. If you want to repay that debt through that person and he is not receptive to you, then you must find yourself not having been warm or zealous enough to do that. If you are all zealous and all willing to repay that debt through that person and he is not receptive and he attacks you back, God will take vengeance on that person. That's what evangelism is, what the witnessing job is. That is the way to liberate the whole population of the world under the bondage of sin and Satan. How wonderful it is to have that kind of job.

**19.** In a few days you will be out on the front-line. You must be very enthused in knowing what kind of person will be the first one you meet. A girl? A boy? An old woman? A laborer? A scholar? Have you imagined and have you decided on that? Whom to speak to? You must plan to do things: for instance, at 7:00 am I will leave my bus for somewhere and I will reach there after ten minutes; in front of a house, etc. There I will be waiting for the first person to come across—with great anticipation I will do that. Suppose there is a man appearing on the corner, would you just stand there blank with twinkling eyes? You must get ready. As soon as you glance at the person, you must be able to prepare for how to tackle him. Very possibly the first one you meet could be a jolly young man whistling, singing as he walks, then what would you do? Would you face him and ask him why he is singing like that? You can even dance to the music, his song, and he will look at you and he cannot but stop there. Then you can become his friend right away. You don't have to witness to him, he'll just come to the Center. That's nothing to laugh about. That could happen.

**20.** Before going out, you must be resolved to do certain things. At least you must be resolved not to make your first experience a failure. On the other hand, you must expect something very difficult, miserable and all that in witnessing.

**21.** If you have been analyzing the personalities of your friends, your family, your neighbors until now, with that experience you can do further research on how people are around you. Your guesswork will prove true for the first few days; at first maybe twenty percent, then thirty percent, then forty percent, fifty percent and finally reaching one hundred percent.

**22.** People you meet will be the material to work on and to be used to face more people. In the past you have not been doing that quite so seriously as you are now, but in this case, you are going to analyze the personality of every person, and then you are going to apply that to meeting more people. If you are talking to that person and then all of a sudden you find that person is thinking of something else, in that case, his eyes will tell you. When that person is talking to you, you can stare at his eyes, and you can detect what kind of person he is and what he is thinking right then. If you are at that moment spiritually well-armed and would pierce your glance through that person, he would be disunited and he would fall back. So, you must know how to catch all those things.

**23.** As the mediator and an evangelist, you must know how to look into their eyes. Your eyes must look in such a way that will please other people and catch their attention. In their head there are only two things moving: your eyes and your mouth. If your eyes look happy, your mouth will immediately be frozen like this in the subject-object position. Your expression is very important when you witness to people. It is because your expression comes before your words. When you handle people, you feel that you can read the people. But it's not as easy as it may seem to you. Your facial expression is important; then your attitude is important. Your motions, your words and finally your action will influence the people. First your expression, then your attitude, then your words and finally your action. You know that your words and your action would come after those things (expression and attitude). Why don't you look at yourself in the mirror. If you find that you look too serious, you must practice making your expression a little sweeter. Don't let the people imagine what kind of person you are. Let them think that you are this kind of person and let them find that you are different and with more qualities.

*The Attitude of an Evangelist 1-26-73*

**24.** What are the three factors you need in order to enter the Kingdom of God? You have to restore the archangels first. Females must be able to restore males in that position and males must be able to restore females. Only after doing that can you have your own spouse because you don't have anyone ready. Then you must look for and find God and True Parents. You must get them. Now that you have God, the True Parents in the place of Adam and Eve, and the archangels helping you, if you say you cannot fight your way through, there is no hope for you to reach the Kingdom. You must go the reverse way of what you would like to do; you must always be ready to serve others. You cannot stand still and call the people to your side; they won't come to you. You must go and bring them to your side or else you are not entitled to enter the Kingdom of God. When you go out you will find many Americans as well as people of different nationalities. What will you be looking for in the front line first of all? The three archangels; what else? The candidate to be your spouse. However, you must not decide by yourself whom to choose. That must never be done. Your spouse must be decided by your parents. When you bring three or more people, you must be able to connect them with the True Parents, and with their consent, permission, or

recognition you can have them registered in the Kingdom of Heaven. What comes after that? You must multiply the number of your spiritual children from three to twelve, 70, 120. When you have gained 120 or more, those people can represent your tribe. That was what Jesus was to realize in his three years in public career. Without being greater than Jesus, you cannot go to the Kingdom of Heaven.

**25.** Our life should be such that it will lead us to the Kingdom of Heaven. In leading that kind of life, we must love and serve others. If you try to plant God's love in the heart of others and try to multiply that love, you will be a victor. You must love those whom God loves. You must serve and love the person whom God loves, and you must be loved by him. When you visit a certain village, you must know that you are going to distribute heavenly love to the people living there. You are going to make them similar to yourself. If you find people who are already loved by God, doing things that are good in God's sight, you must serve and love them. If after doing that you do not get any crops, don't be discouraged; your hard work will be fruitful somewhere else. You can build the Kingdom of God by serving and loving other people.

*Our Life in the Kingdom of God 1-28-73*

**26.** By witnessing to new people, the three people must multiply to twelve members. By doing so, you can have a four-position foundation. Three trinities are like one man.

**27.** When you witness in your native town don't witness to your neighbor, go to a farther place, maybe to the farthest section of town. Old must witness to young. Young to old. Intellectual to ignorant. Wealthy to poor. If extremes unite everybody will become contained in that. We must put two extremes together.

**28.** One man must bring one man per month.

**29.** When you walk to some place or do something, pray for a man to come. How many months did you ever pray for one man?

**30.** We really have to pray and sometimes fast for one soul to save. If we really do that, then sometimes a stranger passing by will come into your house or if you meet someone in the street you might say that you saw that man in your dream. If you really put in many hours of prayer even in the daytime, Father will appear to you and teach you. Sometimes he will eat with you or sometimes if you go someplace, he will go with you and teach you. Even in our life on earth we must have such a life. So, we have to experience God with us, controlling our life.

**31.** If you become absorbed in loving people sometimes in the evening when you see someone passing you will feel that he has come to you or is the one you are looking for. If you have that feeling, then the spirit of God will help you. If you love God first many people can come.

**32.** The reason why we must witness to many people is to experience many loves. By having such an experience, you can increase or make prosperous your warehouse of love. By doing so you can cultivate your own feeling of love. By having so much experience with many types of people, when you go to the spirit world you can have the same broadness.

*Untitled—San Francisco, CA 2-9-73*

**33.** In the future you must be well-armed with the Divine Principle and with witnessing to other people. If you are well armed and well equipped with the ideology it will make it much easier for you to win more people.

*Our Determination to Win 3-1-73*

**34.** Whenever you see a new person come, you are so glad to have this one person come to see you to receive this truth.

**35.** The problem is you—not others, you. If you have a problem of having no witnessing success, that means not the city itself, but you have a problem. You have to find yourself. In front of the mirror, you must look at yourself. What kind of a person are you? Eyes, mouth, and nose—you have to know yourself. Find yourself.

**36.** Why don't you try to give the impression that you are a new citizen of the town, the state, neighborhood, village; that these people are very interesting young people and groups. Interest begins the heavenly business. Arouse their interest. If in your center—it is newly set up or rented, whatever—all the time the neighbors hear some kind of a song, lively song, good-natured song, life-giving song...all these songs should come out from this house. All the time you should have a food element there, a smile, and a flowery, beautiful perfume flavor...all the time something is alive in that place, permeating the neighborhood. All the time, smiling and wonderful harmonies come out to the neighborhood. Why don't you, instead of going all the time...brother-sister, brother-brother, etc....go two or three people all the time together, working in the neighborhood. Sometimes you not only mingle together, working in the neighborhood among the young people—but sometimes you are with elders or seniors, the older generation. Show to the neighborhood. Sometimes you love the neighborhood children, too. Actually, your church center or house should be a different environment from the existing environment of that old time since you moved into that church center. That house should be environmentally interesting to other people.

**37.** You have to tackle the problem of an up-and-down area—by which he means there is the older generation, younger generations, and children, too. With good propaganda, result will come out through the old people; and the children are good propaganda agents. If you can, deal with the

children and teach them the songs and learn to like them in your neighborhood. So, you had better start a Sunday School if your church grows. This is the fastest way to reach the neighborhood. Also, you have to approach the elderly person. The aged people are neglected in this country, so you have to approach this from a different angle. That will be a great sensation. That way, you will cover from the children to the old folks. You have to fill this gap in this nation. The next stage is to work in some attractive area in which young people are interested. You young people should know how to practice exercises. You should like lots of sports, athletics; that area you have to develop. Sometimes races, games, horseback riding, hobbies, that area you have to think up. Also, musically you have to develop. Every aspect of our children and young people and older folks you have to cover through different channels.

**38.** Then, you open your house wide open and invite everybody from your neighborhood. You invite the people of the neighborhood; they will be good contacts. You must have a number. It is very easy to invite celebrities from your town or state, but you have got to have a number—that is the key. Then you are influencing not only your neighbors, but also the celebrity. Then, you develop to the next stage: some kind of project, some kind of youth program or drug prevention. All kinds of youth programs—you can begin right there. Then you will have a big propaganda with this material, reach the celebrities and make a big issue of it. You can organize many things and it will start up from that time. Then the mayor and celebrities will come: "I am here not because I am great, or because I was invited but because I was impressed with your work, and I am here." He has to exhibit why he is there. Then your center, your neighborhood and your city will all mingle together and environmentally you are in very good shape.

**39.** You have got to give some extraordinary impression to remain in that person's heart. You cannot say there is no method to win his heart.

**40.** One person, one soul, one month.

**41.** The direct approach is necessary. Start talking about how this nation is dying under the threat of communism—we have to save it—we have something to offer and so forth. Block them on the street, grab them, use a direct approach to bring them over. You can use an enthusiastic attitude. The girls should be more stubborn, more aggressive than the boys in order to bring them over to the center. Say, "Why don't you come along with us? We have a ride for you." Then, you have to present an enthusiastic lecture presentation.

**42.** But the main thing is that you have three lectures daily, constantly blasting the message. That is important for your foundation.

*First Directors' Conference 3-5-73*

**43.** If you are in the front-line witnessing to people, in case you fail to bring people, it's not because God is not there, it's not because the people are bad, but it's because of yourself being without love.

**44.** To evangelize means to elevate people to your standard, then help him or her to be united with God. Then that person is yours. You are the owner of that soul, and you can return it to God.

*Heart 3-30-73*

**45.** Have you ever thought that you are responsible for those people, and that your every action, every thought, every word will determine whether or not they will be saved? That is the great question. If with that attitude, you have been struggling hard, day and night, waking or sleeping—for this mission, then the whole spirit world cannot but be mobilized in your aid.

**46.** Whenever you feel that you have failed in bringing in people, don't blame God, don't blame the nature of the people, don't blame the nature of the city—blame yourself.

**47.** If you focus your attention on one point and pour out your whole being into your nation, you can even sense what is to come and in what way you can approach people and witness to them, how you can convince and persuade people. You must reexamine yourself, analyze yourself, criticize yourself and recruit yourself; reeducate yourself.

**48.** If you are intoxicated in doing things, if you are almost crazy over the joy of bringing members, the spirit world will work for you, people will see visions, will see you in their dreams and wait for you to come.

**49.** If you have the attitude that you are waiting for a lost child to come back to you, and you set out in search of lost children and you set aside a portion of your candy or any delicate edibles—with a waiting heart you set something like that aside for your spiritual children to come and relish—if you are in such a mood with such an attitude, with a parents' heart waiting for lost children to come back to you, God will be with you and you will be able to find at least one. From my experience, I can readily tell you that if you are in that mood you cannot fail to find your children, spiritual ones.

**50.** When you go out to witness to people, an old person may come along, like this...you may hate the idea of having to speak to that person and will simply pass by. That is not the attitude you should have. Who knows...his son may become the president of a nation; his grandson or great-grandson may be the most famous leader. You must be such a person that that old man will speak to his children about you: "Well, all through my life, being a crippled person, I have been ill-treated, and faced with so much agony and sadness in my heart; but once in my lifetime, I met a gloriously wonderful youth, and this person is so-and-so, and you must remember him for my sake

and do your best to do everything possible for him." He may leave a will before his death—who knows? From that you may be able to become associated with his grandson, and you can—who knows—you might even marry him in the holy blessing. Well, that kind of thing could happen. The children of those old folks may be your future husband or wife—nobody can tell.

*Victory or Defeat 3-31-73*

**51.** When Abel is to restore Cain, Abel is in the position of God to restore satanic men, so from Abel's position Cain is in the position not to have been born. To restore is to give rebirth. Abel is already in a love relationship with parents. Abel is loved by the parents—by God—and he has learned and experienced love from parents and from matrimonial love, so he has to exercise the love he has experienced into practice over Cain.

**52.** Your loving your Cain is your love towards him and an eternally unchangeable one. It is very difficult. When you love your Cain, you must love him or her as though you would your own spouse, and you would hate to let him or her go, and you would cling to him as your own life. If you are in love with your lover, would you not sacrifice yourself willingly, and would you not do just anything for him or for her?

*The Brothers and I 4-8-73*

**53.** Until you are exhausted in tears, until your legs are fatigued, until your whole energy is exhausted in search of that person, you must miss that person. You must be ready to give out your life for that person. You must pour out the whole of your being into that person. You must invest your life in that person; your life will be multiplied in that person. You must plant your soul in that person in order for your soul to be multiplied. You must be loving people with that kind of love.

**54.** When you meet one person, you must think of the person like this, "I am here for this person." You must feel that what you have gone through—all difficulties and hardships—will be fruitful in this person, and you will never let him go without having him in the Family. If you are in the position of absolute plus, then absolute minuses can be created there. The question is you yourself.

**55.** In the course of restoration, you must go back and find your spiritual children and then you can come with me. Unless you are true parents to those spiritual children of yours, you cannot come to me and become one with me. That is what the Principle teaches us. For this I have struggled all through my life. I want you to love your brothers and sisters more than you would

me. Love between brothers and sisters is what I want. In loving them, love them more than you would me, I must say again.

*Significance of the Training Session 5-17-73*

**56.** "I am obligated to give the light to these people. Even during the night our light, the candlelight, is shining—that these people can come. I am the only one who can do this work to save these people." Even during your sleep think, "Please, Father, give me more power to save these people." Such serious thinking—you need it. By doing so heaven will help you.

**57.** When I started from North Korea, I started from Busan (southern part of Korea)—a small place. There, I set up a small cottage. It was actually less than a cottage—just like a dog's house. Now pilgrims are coming to this place—they cry—there are pilgrimages on a continual basis, from Japan and Korea. There is a world of heart—seriousness—it is there because I shed my blood, my sweat, and my tears. Even if you have no material house, there is something different right there, so don't be discouraged or ashamed when you have a poor house. But you have to carry in your heart a seriousness centered on God.

**58.** If you have this kind of heart and persevere this way, it in fact shall happen, because I did it. And people will automatically come. They will come to you even when you have no money, no food—many people will come around. Spiritual cooperation will come. If you continue to work with this kind of heart of gold, spiritual cooperation will come—these people should be fed. The ancestors of that state in spirit world have to mobilize and bring the people to you to get rid of your sorrowful heart. That is the way it works.

*Opening Talk—Morning Session 7-4-73*

**59.** If the people see that you are living in good harmony and unity, and you have something they don't have, then they will be attracted to you. If there is trouble between the leader and the members, you cannot attract people.

**60.** For the white members I warn you to be nicer than anyone else to the Negro people when they come here. You must be humble to them. Those who are underprivileged and those who have been trampled upon are apt to be hurt very easily. It happened a few days ago that one of our members encouraged a Negro woman with a baby to be seated in the rear, and she was hurt and left. And I thought that she could instead have taken care of the child, babysat the child, and let the mother hear the speech. The information was that she got hurt and left. Then those people will not return. And who can be responsible over the life of that woman? It is an important problem.



The life of a man is so important that you must take good care of it. Your life is dear to you; then the lives of other people are dear to them. You must know that.

**61.** In witnessing to the people, you must not discriminate against old people or black people. You don't know who is connected with them and who is in their ancestry. And in witnessing to the people, you must be fair to all the people. Young people being more absorbent, more touchable, will come in more numbers.

*On Leadership 11-9-73*

**62.** Our job is to mobilize. But you cannot succeed unless God helps you, unless spirit world helps you. There is a way to channel the limitless source of power. When I say, "One person, one member, one month;" you say, "Oh boy, how can I do that?" Instead of saying that, say, "Well Father, I will try to bring 120 members in one month."

*Instructions to IOWC Commanders and Team Members 1-31-74*

**63.** You never know what kind of people you will meet today. You never know what kind of potential they have. Furthermore, these people you meet may be lifeless, hopeless today, but because of you they will be resurrected and given new hope and will become great leaders of this world and of this nation. That's the point. So do not look just at the appearance of the people you meet today. Do not disregard anyone because his appearance is poor, he looks so hungry or looks very, very miserable. Do not treat anyone evil only because that person cannot speak English. Do not mistreat anyone because that person happens to be black. Each person is your showdown, your possible victorious moment; and toward each person you must be serious.

*Let Us Turn This Historical Moment into Great Victory 9-8-74*

**64.** You must witness to people without self-centered desire. You must witness to people just because you like them.

**65.** Above all, you must love people with a genuine heart—all kinds of people: children, young people, old people, etc.

**66.** Your eyes must love to see people. Your eyes should not try to see bad things about them. Your eyes must see goodness even in bad people. Then you yourself can become a good person automatically.

*Let Us Establish the Kingdom of Heaven 1-1-75*

**67.** The Principle is simple. When you come to like something, then everything can be solved. Witnessing is the same. You would like to witness very much, wouldn't you? (Yes!) When you go witnessing with this in mind, and with this Principle, you can be successful.

*The Way to True Happiness 3-5-75*

**68.** In a word, I tell you to love others as God would love them, but that doesn't come to you in the concrete sense. But God showed His love towards mankind through your parents. So, you want to follow the example of your parents in loving others. Your parents have loved you more than they would their own selves. You must love your brothers and sisters and all mankind as you would your own self. That will solve the whole problem. Then you will repay all your debts and still leave something behind.

*Let Us Repay Our Debts 3-10-75*

**69.** Happiness being the human goal, in the battle against Satan, Satan will be defeated by our being solely happy in attacking them and in winning their hearts. That's the only secret you must be armed with when you go out witnessing to people. When Satan planned to tempt Eve his heart was full of hope. In order for us to be able to win over Satan, we must be happy and hopeful inside and outside. When Satan tempted Eve, he did that centered on himself. But we have God working through us and for us, so we are stronger, and of course, purer in our happiness.

**70.** You can never say it is difficult to raise a person. If you fail to raise him, it is because you have witnessed to him and brought him into the movement for the sake of your honor, not for the sake of the spiritual life of that person. In educating him, you should have talked more about God, more about True Parents, instead of telling him about yourself.

*Cain-Abel Relationships 3-15-75*

71. Another secret is this: you are just beginning, you have no spiritual children and you have to prepare your heart. You have to feel how much Heavenly Father is looking for His lost children. You have to start from within yourself. You have to really feel the aching feeling of God who lost His children for whom He is looking! You have to have that kind of heart all the time when you are looking for people.

72. Let's look at the parental heart. When a parent loses three children, that is a serious feeling looking for the lost children. You have to feel and practice that. You have to start with that mind condition or real feeling of heart in the beginning. When a lost child comes back crying "Momma! Dad!" then you embrace them with a feeling more than wanting to dance and shout. You have to carry that kind of feeling.

73. This is the mind of the missionary, the heart of the Heavenly Father who lost His children, "Where's my child, where's my child?" It is a serious feeling. That's the starting point when you feel the Heavenly Father's aching heart. This means you must preach with heart, crying.

*Directives to Foreign Missionaries 3-20-75*

74. There are many, many ways for you to witness to the people. You don't always have to give lectures to the people. For instance sometimes you can blow a trumpet on the street, or just initiate a quarrel in the corner of a park. People will observe very naturally, and then you can become a dynamic speaker. If there is anyone opposing you, pick up the right topic right there and talk about that man whether or not he is good or evil. You can initiate your talk in many ways. If you keep waiting and waiting with folded hands for people to come, no one will come.

75. To attract people's attention, suppose you go out to any restaurant and order many rich dishes, then use your fingers to eat. It will attract many people's attention. In using knives and forks, you can make a clashing noise and after dinner, if there's a platform you will go up to the platform, and people will notice you. Then you can smile a broad daylight smile, saying, "I used a certain tactic on you. As I came into the restaurant;" you can say, "I thought up a plan, and I knew that I was going to attract your attention like this and I'm successful!" Then instead of being angry at you, the audience in the restaurant will giggle and be happy. And you become suddenly decent, proper and all that, make a bow, and begin your speech. By the time you end your speech, they will feel like having more from you. Your topic can be social matters, moral problems, adolescent problems, drug usage problems. All those things. You'll glance at a plump lady like this and pretending not to have noticed, talk about your experience of having met a woman weighing so many pounds who walked zig zag like this. Thinking that that woman is far bigger than she herself, maybe that person will be pleased. You can cast jokes on a certain person, specifically.

**76.** If you want to meet with the principal of a certain school, why do you have to visit him in the office, in a very polite manner where it is difficult for you to approach him? Why don't you wait for him at the gate and just dash to him and say, "Hello! How do you do? I'm certain I have met you somewhere ... Don't you remember me? Maybe I was one of your pupils in my elementary school days?" Before long you can be acquainted with that person very easily. If you use that tactic for a good purpose, it's permitted.

**77.** I did the same so many times in my childhood days. On my way to school, I would hide my school hat inside my pockets and just talk to the people on the way throwing jokes and things like that. They would think I was their age and conversations could easily start. Even though one of your classmates is around he wouldn't recognize you because you are such a good actor or actress. He will suddenly realize that it is you and then think, "Oh, he's such a serious-looking young man in the class, I didn't dream of his being right there." My friends didn't dare speak to me, and they would talk among themselves, and the next day when I came to class, they would innocently ask me if I was on the street yesterday at a certain hour. I would shake my head and say, "No, you must be mistaken. I'm told that quite a few people resemble me. Maybe my face is ordinary so that there are many people resembling me." I sometimes deliberately acted like that so even my classmates could not recognize me.

**78.** If you go to your mission field and wait and wait for people to come and say to yourself, "I'm a good lecturer, but there are no people to whom I can lecture, what am I going to do?" Instead of sitting there, if I were you I would go out to the street and finding a fat dog, I would sit on his back. The owner of the dog will come to quarrel with you and you can say, "Oh! Is it your dog? I'm sorry I have done this, I just tried to sit on his back because it looks so plump and I was tempted to do it. I wanted to know how fast the dog can run." Looking at the man you can say, "Oh! You look so smart, and so bright. The dog resembles the owner: no wonder the dog is so speedy and clever!"

**79.** There are many, many other ways to witness to people and contact them.

**80.** Don't stay at home waiting for people! I hate the idea. You are born to be a man, born to be a woman. How can you come to be like that? You must have confidence and courage. Life is a drama, and you must act out your role. Read some novels. They are fabricated stories describing real life. Why don't you imitate the characters in them becoming heroes and heroines? You must know the tactic of casually doing this and that. You must study and your tactics will improve.

*Who Will Be Responsible for the Providence of God? 3-23-75*

**81.** You can even put yourself in the position of God's son and do the same as Satan did in tempting God's children; you can tempt and lure away the kidnapped children of God from the bondage of Satan.

**82.** We are armed with the method of attracting people with heart. It is the Principle that any creation is attracted and drawn to people who love them most. If you are a man and have witnessed to and brought into the movement a girl, you are responsible for the girl's growth so that she reaches perfection or spiritual maturity. That is our first weapon—heart. Our heart will draw the people.

**83.** You can freely serve them. It is the act of making them resemble you. You are the exemplary person to them and by serving them again and again, you can teach them how to serve people. Service is the act of recreation. When God created man, He invested His whole being there. That is the second weapon.

**84.** If you have heart and service wherever you go, people are inclined to follow you.

**85.** The third weapon is your word. You must educate them with the truth, leading them back to the original position. You must teach them how it has been an act of sin to be associated with a male or female in the worldly sense, and how grieved God must have been to see that relationship in worldly parents and sons and daughters. You must show them how to go back to the original status of life, and in so doing you must set up the tradition for them to follow. If you have done that much, even though you want to chase them away, they will never leave you. That's the standard to which you must raise your children.

**86.** When you belong to God, you are so attractive to satanic people that they will long to see you, they miss you in such a way that they cannot sleep, cannot eat, cannot do anything. That's what is going to happen around you. That is the law of gravity centered on the magnetic power of law, and life energy coming from the love of God. That is our weapon, if used for a good purpose. Our love has more magnetic power, stronger power to attract people than worldly love, so it is natural for the people to be drawn to you.

**87.** Adam and Eve were drawn to the satanic side by satanic love. But with divine love, heavenly love, godly love, we must draw them back to God's side. You must understand and you must be able to teach those people that after going through three years of active service in our movement, or seven years at the longest, that you really belong to our movement, and you can be recognized by the True Parents.

**88.** We have three weapons with which to win people: with heart, with service, and with the words of truth. These three weapons are indispensable.

**89.** You must reach the people with the truth, with words. And by the sacrificial service you show them, they will be connected to you in love.

**90.** There are roughly two types of persons: the emotional type and the intellectual type. You must be able to distinguish which type a certain person is and approach him in that way. In teaching them, the first thing you are going to explain is the existence of God as our Father. Man is an orphan, and we have a Father. Father is the Father of the past, present, and future. He has been with us, He is now with us, and He will ever be with us. He has struggled so hard with a longing heart to have us back. By so teaching, they will realize God's existence and begin to feel God's love. After having done that, they will be emotionally connected with God.

**91.** God will tell you that you are in the position where it is easier for you to witness to people than for Him: "I'm an invisible entity, I've no hands to work with." We have a physical body. You can employ every possible way. You can tell the people the truth, and if they don't receive it, you can frown and even cry and cling to them and appeal to them again and again. God is always there, grieved and weeping when the people don't receive, but they don't understand, they don't feel the presence of God. How grieved God must be every moment. It is most wonderful that we have our physical bodies.

*God, Myself, and the Country of My Assignment 4-21-75*

**92.** In witnessing to people, you must have the idea that you are working 24 hours a day, awake or asleep. You are not concerned about food, shelter, or clothing. Your mind must be intoxicated in this one thing: witnessing.

*Youth Must Have Hope 9-11-75*

**93.** You must remember that God is always saying, "If you really love me, you must love people outside more than you do your own brothers and sisters in this movement."

*To Whom Do I Belong 1-16-77*

**94.** You don't know the impact of your witnessing. You may witness to someone who can affect an entire generation in England, or he may contact another person important and wealthy enough to do that. That person would be your spiritual grandchild. Through bringing one person to a realization of the truth, you are making an impact on his whole nation and his whole spirit world. You may think that you are just a trivial individual; never think that. You have within yourself power that can move the world. If you move one person perhaps that person could move many countries or even continents.

**95.** You are the most important person to your spiritual child because you gave him the most precious thing under the sun: the hope to become a son or daughter of God. That person is totally indebted to you. He will not chase you away but will welcome you.

**96.** You can even compete with God. God has been trying to change men for 6,000 years and He could not accomplish too much! But you can change a man within one week. It is an exciting task. How can your mouth stop preaching? How can your legs rest? Exciting things are happening; how can we stop?

*Word and Deed 1-30-77*

**97.** Without knowing this principle many people cry out, "Why did supreme, almighty God let His people suffer?" Many people try to say there is no God, or if there is a God that He is helpless. But when you know the Principle, you know where God is.

*Today in the Light of Dispensational History 2-23-77*

**98.** You may have noticed by now that some people witness very easily while others cannot witness effectively and have great difficulty. It is a spiritual law that an individual must have a personal foundation of indemnity in order to effectively witness to others.

**99.** Two people may be faced with the same difficult situation yet one of them does not accomplish much, while the other easily brings results. The difference is mainly that the ancestors of the successful person are qualified to help him.

**100.** Anyone who is witnessing has to be able to arouse a person's interest toward God, the Church, and toward himself.

**101.** If you just witness to someone without having some personal foundation of your own, they will not respond. You must consider how each of you is going to create your own foundation.

**102.** Always imagine that with your own hands you will nurture 100 people, even 1,000 people, in your own state.

**103.** The strong advice that I want to give you is to be never comfortable. Go out and witness to someone who is negative or give a lecture to a new type of person. But keep fighting the battle and allow yourself to get hit. If you are complacent then even try to have a deep feeling of resentment. With that unrest you will then be able to overcome.

**104.** If we cannot achieve 1-1-1, can we still say that we will bear the historical responsibility? Think deeply about this. If you had as intense a sense of responsibility and emergency as I do, then you would witness even 1-1-10.

**105.** Have you ever really burst into tears outside in the street while witnessing to the people? Have you ever had a sleepless night in prayer? I have prayed to God in such a demanding and intense way that my heavy clothing became soaking wet. This has happened on many occasions. Except for that, what is the difference between us? We all eat the same amount of food and we live in 24 hour days.

**106.** As witnesses you must have such a deep heart of concern that you burst into tears when you pray for the people. You must strive to make yourselves that way, but without my experience for comparison you will not progress too far.

**107.** Suppose one of your hard-won members goes somewhere and does not return by the middle of the night. Would you really stay awake and cry for him, praying for his return? If you do that and he does come back the next day, he will tell you that he also had a sleepless night.

**108.** People will come desiring to have their lives connected to your life when they feel that God is present with you. You have to feel God's presence in your centers. When you maintain this spiritually then people will come and rest in you. Each day, without thinking, you will know who will come to visit and what kind of events will occur. When you can develop such a heart, then imagine how interesting witnessing will become. For this reason, I am telling you that you must have deep and intense prayer.

**109.** The period in my life when I prayed most intensely was when I witnessed for the lives of others. I prayed in an area that was nine square feet and that area was always soaking wet with my tears. Man's departure from God took place in the midst of tears, and now as man is being restored back to God, we must meet God in a tearful position.

**110.** Not only must you pray but there must always be prayer in your center. Again, I want to tell you to have constant 24-hour prayer in your centers, and if there are not enough people to do this, then record somebody's prayer and play it back. Prayer is that essential.

**111.** When you encounter any man on earth, you must value him in the realization that I have come just to save that man. You must feel that love and closeness for the most insignificant man let alone for the great man whom you can easily appreciate. You must love the least important man because I have come to save him. Train yourself to feel that closeness for another person. When a member joins, no matter how shabby he may look you must remember that I came for him, and value him just as much as you value me. You need to feel the intense closeness and vitality of such love.



**112.** You need to experience how glad I must be to meet that person for the first time in 6,000 years and learn to develop that heart for all the people with whom you come into contact. Gradually you have to deepen the intensity of feeling for them so that when you see them for the tenth time you are as happy as you were when you first met them. If you can associate me with them in your mind, then such deep love for them will eventually come naturally to you.

**113.** Your own yearning to be with me wherever I go can be immediately transmitted to others.

**114.** When you feel that deeply about some person, if he does not come for a few days, you will not be able to control yourself in your urgency to see him. When you pray from your deepest heart, "I must see him; I cannot live without him," then he will be drawn to come by a warm feeling. Once such a bond is established then even if you kick him out, he will not leave you.

**115.** Your feelings are reflected in the spirit world, and then felt by other people. If you really love the person you witness to, then he has no place on this wide earth he wants to go except to where that love is. Once you can feel these things then your spiritual door is open to communication. You have to train yourselves to relate to others in this way. It is not possible to cheat in spiritual things as it is in worldly matters. Anger, for example, brings much disturbance to the spirit world.

**116.** When you develop this intense prayer then those who are the objects of your prayers will come to where you are in spite of themselves, even going to the train station to get to their spiritual home. Have you ever experienced this yourselves? Have you been able to love another in such a way that you can save him, and he will follow you wherever you go? That is the perfect savior, isn't it? When you share this beautiful love with another it will probably be the first such experience in that person's life. Since it is the first, he will cherish the memory of it as long as he lives. You have to have that intense feeling of love toward people you witness to. When you love a person like that, he will be drawn to you.

**117.** The first step in witnessing is to think, "I myself must become perfect." Then you will be able to give goodness to other people.

**118.** What is heaven? Heaven starts by loving another human being the way God does.

**119.** If you have witnessed to many people and have been raising many members in your church, you will have experienced the fact that each person is different. When you meet a person, you may sense that he has a certain type of personality that resembles someone you know. Then you can use your past experience in relating to him. A pine tree in Korea and a pine tree in America are very different but at the same time they are similar. In the same way, almost 90 percent of you resemble one of the thousands of people whom I have already nurtured and poured love into. Maybe you have differently set eyes, or a larger nose, but the pattern of your character is the same and you are no strangers to me.

**120.** People often possess similar natures, even expressing themselves in the same way. In order to recognize the similar qualities in people you have to pay loving attention to them. Then you will come to love their characteristics and see how God also resembles them. God loves man not just for himself, but for his godly character.

**121.** Now you know to witness with tears. What is the gateway that makes this possible? Love opens the door to the spirit world. How much love? You must become able to love more than anyone else has loved you, even your father or mother, and more than you have ever previously loved anyone. The beginning of love in the spirit world is the feeling of deepest love for the True Parents and then for other men. If you love below God's standard, then you are in the realm of love that Satan enjoys. God will never accept your love if it has not been separated from Satan.

**122.** How can you bring others to tears? Only by shedding tears first; nothing else can bring that experience to them. I always felt the necessity of this and want you to feel this also.

**123.** Because I am consumed with these feelings someone can come and speak certain words to me and my tears will just flow down my face. In that world of heart God can come down and make immediate connection with the fallen world. Have you ever missed a person who went away and became so frantic to find him that you did not even put your shirt on correctly but just started running? Have you ever experienced that kind of insane desperation? If you have not experienced that yet, then is your attitude of mind anywhere close? Have you ever intensely desired to improve? Sometimes I go out and see a sunset and a quiet scene, I want to start crying because I feel such heaviness that young men and women must suffer so much for me and my work. I feel so sorry for you young people, and I cannot even sit because I am so uncomfortable and agonized for you. I just cannot help but cry out.

*How to Witness: To State Leaders 4-1-77*

**124.** I cried out in prayer to God pledging and swearing that every dollar our members made represented every penny of America's great wealth, and that every member that our Unification Church members brought represented the entire population of this nation. "God, honor their effort, honor their success, honor their sacrifice, God, each one of our members is taking up America's role. Each dollar you earn must be glistening with your tears; such money is more precious than any amount of money earned in business." Each member you bring must be the fruit of your sweat and blood and hard work.

*True Parents' Day from the Historical Point of View 4-18-77*

**125.** You don't know how hard I worked in witnessing. For seven years in the early days in Korea I slept only two hours a night, and day after day I spent preaching the word of God and teaching the Principle myself. Sometimes members would become drowsy and sleepy and then all of a sudden be chastised by an angel saying, "How can you sleep like this when he is working so hard day in and day out?" I'm sure this is the first time you have heard these things. The things I ask you to do I have already done many times in the past. Now I am asking you to do the same. You have no cause to complain.

*The Heart of Reunion 9-11-77*

**126.** There are all kinds of human lives and all different levels of living. I must be able to link each of them with heaven and take them all there. It is your responsibility to learn how to lead those who refuse to go into heaven. It is easy to lead those who are willing to go to heaven; the people who want to join the Unification Church are no problem but turning the adversaries of the Unification Church around and convincing them of the truth is your duty.

**127.** God is one magnetic pole in heaven, and I am another magnetic pole here on earth and together we have formed an electric field. Everyone in that magnetic field can be activated. You may feel as though you are being pulled towards me, but then when we are one you will realize that you have become a magnet also. Then you can pull many others, so great is the supreme power of love. You are not drawn to me personally, but to the love of God which is being transmitted through me. That love belongs to God and not to any individual.

*The Ones Who Can Receive God's Love 10-1-77*

**128.** The fallen process began with words, but words which were lies. Satan took everything away from God, not with weapons and violence, but with words. By the same token you will give the word and love of God to bring back to God the things Satan took away. False love and lies brought about the fall and therefore the truth and true love of God will bring the satanic things back to God. It's very logical restoration. The entire world is starving for truth and true love. If you really become a heavenly messenger and disseminate truth and the love of God, then people will be gathered to you like small metal pieces pulled by a magnet.

**129.** How many of you are going door-to-door shedding tears for your people? Have you ever thought that God cannot come to those doorsteps physically and needs you to represent Him? You must feel that you are knocking on the door as a representative of God gathering your heart and love and everything together trying to penetrate that door and win the hearts of the people inside. You can feel that heart of God, who has come to this door after many thousands of years

preparation. God has reached that door through you but only after many thousands of years of ordeal. He just didn't come overnight.

**130.** When you open the door and the person looks at you, you may feel tears falling down your face, stopping your words. Have you ever visited your homes with that heart? Many of you may feel that you don't want to do this but you must go with tears, truth, and love. You must knock on each door equipped with these three things. No matter how evil the person inside the house may be, Satan cannot claim those tears or your truth or your true heart of love. As long as Satan is incapable of doing that you will be a victor.

**131.** When you go to witness to the people and try to bring spiritual children you must shed tears for them; unless you are tearfully loving them and thinking of them you will lose them. You must be so moved as to speak about the truth with tears and convey the love of God with tears. When you meet the people in that fashion God will be with you. There is no other way.

**132.** Let those 360 homes be like your own children's homes. Go out there and stay up all night talking and look at the rising morning sun together with them. You must have the conviction in your heart that you are God's representative to them. You needn't think of visiting only during the daytime but also at midnight.

*The Return to Tears 10-16-77*

**133.** Actually, we are here to spread love. Even if the people hate us, we still want to spread the love of God. We want to talk about the love of God, on doorsteps and street corners and in airports and bus stations. Every word and deed are the gift of love, a manifestation of love.

*The Tradition of the Unification Church 12-11-77*

**134.** The time will come when you can go back to your own father and brothers to resolve everything, saying, "Here I am and here is my record of accomplishment. What did I do wrong? What is selfish?" If they recognize that your record is a God centered one then you can say, "Won't you follow me then and respect my judgement?" In your home you can be straightforward, unlike with strangers. Once you sway your physical father then your brothers will also follow. It won't be that difficult.

**135.** This testimony will become the greatest of all: "I used to be like you, and I opposed him when I didn't know him too well, but after knowing him I changed. I used to have no vision and pursued carnal pleasure, but today I'm working for God and the world. If you say that this is wrong then you are indeed an enemy of God and mankind." When you talk to your own parents you can

Speak very openly. "This is what I am. More than anyone you know what I used to be like, so which one would you take? If you approve my goals and way of life now, then you must be sympathetic and supportive." Be bold and strong, and don't hesitate.

*New Morning of Glory 1-22-78*

**136.** People are drawn to the unusual and the extraordinary. The person who tackles the task with absolute determination, whether or not he has proper meals, clothing, or shelter, commands the most attention. When night comes, one person carrying a heavy weight might just sit where he finds himself and rest with the mission. Another would say, "I must get back because I need a comfortable bed to rest in overnight." Which attitude commands more attention?

*The Burden of Destiny 2-19-78*

**137.** If the average family in your area has three members, then there are more than 1,000 people in your area and there is bound to be someone you know who likes what you are doing and who wants to work with you.

**138.** When you go to your area you can tell the people that there is a movie of 1,800 couples getting married in one ceremony and invite them to see it. Maybe the grandparents won't be so interested, but the young people of marrying age would certainly like to see what happens in such a ceremony. Now that you are a Unification Church member yourself you can judge what the people will be interested in seeing. When they like something and are excited, you can tell them that there is an even more interesting movie to see and soon they will come a second time.

**139.** The home churches may be small to begin with, but after a while many folks in the area will drop in for a while and visit and see the films. When you know many young people who play instruments they can get together and form a band, and whenever an older member of the family has a birthday, they can all have an enjoyable hour entertaining them. Record all the birthday dates in a notebook and on those dates go there to play for them. If you keep track of all the birthdays of the members of the households in your area, you will be going to three birthdays a day!

**140.** As you get acquainted with them, they will be fascinated with you as a young person who is completely different from what they usually see. They will invite you to visit often and even invite you to stay overnight. When they see you often during the year, they will invariably know your value too. They heard about Moonies a long time ago, but now that you are visiting them in person all year round, they will realize that you are jewels of young people. When you have a place with games like ping pong and a pool table, it will become the club for young people in the

neighborhood. If the circumstances are fitting then you can go horseback riding, and when there is a wedding then people can celebrate there in a fantastic way.

**141.** There is great room for developing this home church idea. Are you interested? You have heard about indemnity but so far, I have paid all the indemnity on your behalf. Why don't you just follow along and live the easy way of life now? Or now that I have paid so much, will you pay enough to lift mine away? Am I going to buy you the equipment for your home church or will you buy it yourselves? Then it will become your property and you can start your own church.

**142.** You were each given an area of 360 homes. If you really visited your area at least once a day then by this time you should know where everyone in the neighborhood lives and what kind of persons they are. If you go for ten days then all your effort remains there and doesn't go away somewhere else. If you visit there for one hundred days then one hundred days of effort remains there. It does not disappear like the people you meet street witnessing.

**143.** When you visit your area, the old ladies there will watch you, and when you come back often they will want to know who you are. After many frequent visits they will say, "They are really persistent. They keep coming quite regularly. Actually they are more devoted than my own grandchildren." Many older people are now disillusioned and disheartened by their own offspring, but if you keep visiting you will attract their attention and you are certain to leave a lasting impression on them. The young people will say that you are better than their own brothers and sisters, and the parents will say you are better than their own children.

**144.** As time wears on people are sure to have a deep positive impression of you. The old folks will talk with each other about you and say, "These Moonies are wonderful people. We want to help them." They are bound to be curious and ask what you are doing this for, and when they know you are a Moonie, they will ask you what Reverend Moon is like and what he does. But if you only go once or twice to your areas you won't arouse any interest.

**145.** I gave you each 360 homes in order to distribute God's love to you. As you distribute more love to the people then you in turn will become bigger and bigger. If you do not distribute love to the other people, however, then you will stay as gaunt as you are. If a tree wants to live then it must grow many branches and be healthy. If a tree grows no branches, then it will simply wither away and die. I have never met one sensible person who asked me why I assigned him only 360 homes to distribute love to instead of three times as many.

**146.** Is it better to establish large indemnity conditions or only little ones? You didn't know about that until this morning, did you? If you are now going to do that as if you were crazy, then that's very encouraging and God will be happy. I told you almost a year and a half ago to visit all your homes, and now I am assigning you to establish a church in those homes. You will soon learn exactly how to do it through your own personal experience in establishing a center. You may not know the Divine Principle well enough to lecture to other people so I had a video tape film made

of the lectures. All you have to do is push a button and two or three hours of lectures will come through in clear, natural color.

**147.** You have experienced how every person has ups and downs and how people drift away because they are confused or tired. So far in witnessing you might pour five or six months into one person and then when he leaves, he is impossible to find. But when you have a home church, you can go to his home and talk with him for a few minutes and he will come back.

**148.** Go to your area and contact the people and plan where the best place for a home church will be. Once you become successful with one home in your area you can branch out and there can be as many home churches in your area as is practical.

*Where God Resides and His Course 3-19-78*

**149.** You can't keep a distance from people with a critical attitude; you have to meet everyone so that they can evaluate for themselves who is right and who is wrong. Go along and bother them and show them what is wrong and right by your personal example. In thirty minutes of talking seriously to them you will be able to convince them that the strange stories they have been hearing about the Unification Church are wrong.

*I Proclaim That I Know 4-1-78*

**150.** What is the difference between God's champion and Satan's champion? Satan took God's children and killed them, but I am taking Satan's children to save them.

*Time and Our Destined Relationship 4-2-78*

**151.** This home church program is like Jacob's journey of 21 years in Haran. You are going to accumulate your own flock and then fight a battle with an angel, and then go back to meet Esau and your own family. I have gone a great distance to pave the way, crossing the ford of Jabbok on every level—the individual, family, tribe, nation and world. I paved the way by crossing the ford and wrestling with the angel. You only have to struggle once, however, and restore your own family. When you establish a home church, you are becoming a tribe leader; then I will give a blessing before you go back to your homes. For 21 years Jacob endured all kinds of mistreatment from his uncle Laban. Forming a home church is like this. You are going through 21 years of Jacob's life course right now. After you are victorious under those circumstances, you will be ready to gather your family and your things and go back home.

**152.** Our fight is to plant the love of God and the love of people. Then that love will unite and stimulate the original minds of others. Because the original mind longs to go back to the original world, our power will be exercised by stimulating it with love. Furthermore, we will draw the focus to a common center. Then who will be the center of all mankind? There is no doubt that God is that center.

*Parents' Day 4-8-78*

**153.** You can't just do ordinary things; you have to be extraordinary. It doesn't mean I am encouraging you to do things like robbing banks, though. Do something drastic in a good sense. If there are many people gathered together somewhere like a market, open up a way to surprise them and give an impromptu speech about the situation of this country and what young people and old people should do. This is a practical thing. It is difficult to do, of course, so what you must do is memorize a speech and practice so you can do it with your eyes closed. There are few people who have done that.

**154.** Humor and ability to move someone only come after long experience.

*The Age of New Dispensation 5-14-78*

**155.** You never know who you will meet when you go witnessing door to door. You might find an important man who later on might save the whole nation. You must be prepared to meet such a person. Even though you are tired you should visit one more home at the end of the day because that may be where you meet the person who could save the nation. You may have visited a hundred homes and not met the man who could save the nation, but he might be in number 101. If you live like that, then God will lead you to such a man.

**156.** Wherever you go with that heart, spirit world will prepare for you. Always think that you are going to find someone whose heart you can connect with the heart of God. You are reaching out to heaven and that door you knock on is your stepping stone. We are always searching for that special, righteous man, and if you are walking with God's guidance then all of a sudden, without realizing how it happened, you meet someone and you are sure he is that man. You can experience this not only once but several times while you are witnessing. It should even be a common thing for you.

**157.** You can know what intensity of feeling you must have before this can happen by comparing it to the most intense love you felt before coming to the Church. You have to go beyond that before you will start experiencing these things. You should want to witness with that strength of feeling and to meet someone who can be witnessed to with that intensity of love. You should



want to see this person so much that you are ready to cry. This is not an easy life to go through because our eyes should always be wet with tears for the family, the nation and the world.

**158.** Whenever you visit a house, think that this is the house of a precious person whom God loves. Don't treat him in a casual way but show your earnest concern and respect and he will ultimately accept you. Then the people will miss you when you are away and will want you to come often. We are distributing love to them, not trying to take something away.

**159.** If a very pure girl goes out witnessing then many men will follow her, being ready to die with her. That is fine, but once they come to the Church they will not do just as they like but will follow our direction. If you have a genuine love and try to save people, then men and women will follow you and come to the Church. One thing we must get straight at the beginning is that none of us can do just as we like once we come to the Church.

**160.** The power of love is like a magnet drawing people to you. When you have that kind of mind and pray to God, you will feel as though some strings attach you to the person you are praying for; you are pulling him, and he comes to you in response to your prayer. When you pray about his home over and over again, when you visit there, you will feel that the people will never let you go. You will know ahead of time that you will run into this person at a certain place, and sure enough he will be there, even if you are late. I want you to have that kind of experience.

**161.** Whenever one man feels like I do, the women will tag along after him and listen to him. You must have a straight mind and not think badly about such a person. The same happens when a woman becomes like that; then the men will follow her. Most important of all, you must always regard the women as your sisters, or if they are older cherish them as you would your mother. Never think of a sister as your wife or girlfriend. The same thing goes for the women; never think, "That brother has such a straight mind. I wish I could be blessed with him." You must keep yourself very clean and pure so that even though you cannot yet generate the light of love yourself you can at least reflect that light to the world like the moon. As your mind and body become completely one, God's love is within you, and with a pure mind the brightness of God's love will come through you. To be like that you must live for the sake of other people.

**162.** Your eyes are emitting rays of light, and a fragrance emanates from your whole being. You will experience this sooner or later; this is not a dream. When you become spiritually elevated in that way and go into a dark room you will see your hands shine like a lamp. Original man was that precious. If a man has sin, however, he cannot see into you. If your hands glow like that because of love then your eyes can see through any barrier and understand anything. People will want to follow such a pure man of understanding and become like him. You have to establish that pattern so people will want to follow your tradition of love.

**163.** If you are carrying a big load of love, it may fill your sack so full that it breaks open and the love spills out. Then many people will come after you to pick up that spilled love for

themselves. You may hear many comments like, "The Divine Principle is fine but I like this person more than the truth. That's why I am following him." But even though they like you, the people will not do just as they please; instead, they are going to follow your direction. You came because you like me, but you don't do just as you like, do you? You follow my way.

*The Burden on Our Shoulders 6-11-78*

**164.** When you go door-to-door and witness you cannot just start out and expect to be welcomed by the people. You have to be really content within yourself, and before you set out, think, "What kind of people am I going to meet today? Definitely I'll be meeting all different kinds of people—short, tall, people with smiles on their faces, people who leave a bad taste in my mouth." Just think that they are there for your own enjoyment. First of all you have to be contented; then as you visit them you will be able to receive all their different sentiments.

**165.** Those who never feel contentment or peace and gratitude in their minds can never help other people, let alone save them. When you go out witnessing, people sometimes say harsh things to you, but never get angry at them. Be prepared for that and respond, "Now is the time when I can be really grateful."

**166.** So far you have been witnessing with the attitude, "I am supposed to do this and I don't have much choice." If you go out witnessing in that mood, then you can't be grateful because of the purpose you serve. How many of you have been witnessing with grateful minds? Don't tell a lie!

**167.** You can never effectively witness to another person if you complain.

*Let Us Be Grateful 6-18-78*

**168.** Each person must love his parents and be a son or daughter of filial piety. Once you gain this new knowledge you can go witness knowing that you have a real connection with parents, and then you can love your brother with the attitude, "My brother, I am coming because God wants me to." The whole universe and every person is your brother and sister, not just in idea but in reality. You must feel that love as the real reason why you go out to witness.

**169.** If your supreme purpose is love, can you give up when you meet with persecution? With the right point of view, resistance will only intensify your desire to bring your brother. Let persecution work to encourage you even more to bring your true brother and sister to the bosom of their Parents.

**170.** The more you reflect the mind and heart of the True Parents, the faster everyone will respond to us. If you keep going, you will bear the same fruit as the True Parents tree, smaller perhaps, but nevertheless of the same quality.

*One Age, One Generation 9-3-78*

**171.** When we go door-to-door and are persecuted, that challenge gives us some standard of love to achieve. We will love the people and never be beaten by their persecution. We will push our level of love higher and higher every day, and even if there is more persecution because of misunderstanding, we can persevere with greater love. If we keep on living this way today, tomorrow and every day, then we will be prepared for the world to come.

*For the Future 9-10-78*

**172.** You can tell people, "If you want to know about the Moonies, come with me and live with us for three days. You will learn a lot." Let them taste the water and taste the Divine Principle. What is the power that makes you so sure that God's kingdom on earth can be a reality? Let them learn about this. Divine Principle enters your body and cleanses it of all kinds of ingredients that you clog up. We call it Moonwash.

**173.** Each one of you can be a magnet like me and have the power to pull people. If you are really intoxicated in the love of God, you too shall become a magnet and pull the people of Africa, South America and the Middle East. You must pull the people with slanted eyes and people of all colors of skin.

**174.** You have to long for the members and really care for them more than your own children, your wife or husband. You have to long for one spiritual child. I had the experience of really caring for one member and because of that love that person couldn't go away. He just couldn't get up because his legs didn't listen to him. In the early days of our Church, I directly taught the Divine Principle and personally nurtured members in Korea. Housewives came and husbands came, and they forgot to go back on time to their work or to go back home to cook the meals for their husbands. In many cases that was the cause of problems.

**175.** Once you have spiritual power, there's no segment of the world you cannot reach. You can go anywhere, knock on any door and open up any direction or area. Now I am pushing you out for evangelizing because the time will come when you won't have to witness. So many people will be coming that you will spend all your time taking care of them.

**176.** In witnessing you are selling the love of God and Divine Principle. Now put your heart into witnessing and meticulously prepare whatever you need. You must be different from before and your influence will touch the people. Raise your flag and don't hesitate to say you are a Moonie. You have to be exemplary in your neighborhood. In the winter shovel snow and in the summer tend the gardens and streets in the neighborhood. The first house to have snow shoveled should be the Moonies' house. Then people will come to solicit your services for themselves, and they will need only one-third as many people to help them as before. This kind of thing has an impact on people.

*Mainstream of the Dispensation of God 11-19-78*

**177.** Have you really gone out with a compassionate heart? Can you say that you have truly served someone and unselfishly given yourself to some family, some country, or the world? The world is only an expanded version of your family and your country. Your nation is a microcosm of the entire universe. Therefore, when you serve your family, you are actually serving the world. When you serve your nation, you are serving the universe. If this concept is always in your mind than you can set the condition while you are here on earth that you really lived and served someone. For that purpose, God gave you a husband or wife, and He gave you children. By serving them you have served the universe and mankind. The purpose of having a home is to set this kind of condition.

*Breaking the Barrier 12-10-78*

**178.** We must expand our territory with our brothers and sisters growing in numbers. Once the satanic people are found they are our brothers and sisters, not our enemy. Only Satan is our enemy. We must restore these people and thus expand our territory. You must not deprive them due to your small thinking. Think that if Satan works 24 hours a day, you will work 25 hours a day to restore your brothers. That's the only way.

*Let Us Restore Our Homeland and Fatherland 1-14-79*

**179.** Love your spiritual children as much as you love me.

*What Kind of Thought Do You Have? 6-10-79*

## SERMONS

---

1. Even if people do not listen to your words, they will be moved by your attitude. When you preach you must labor, sweat, toil, work and shed tears. Then your soul is preaching. Speak from power and authority, humbly, not arrogantly. People are attracted by your strong effort to win them. Preaching a sermon, like praying, is a battle. You do it from your soul and heart and mind. The spiritual battle is similar to wrestling. Even in gesturing, do so with spirit. Feel that you are moving the universe. When you stand in front of a congregation to preach a sermon, feel that you are making a proclamation of revolution.

2. Good preaching should not require organization of the thoughts but should be like water flowing.

3. When you are giving a sermon, you must start at the level of the lowest one in the group. Humble yourself, belittle yourself! If you announce that you are about to deliver a great message which you have prepared, no one will receive any inspiration. Start at the bottom.

4. In order to give a good sermon, you must be inspired first. Unless your heart is touched and you are in the grace of God, you can never inspire other people. You must be capable of first inspiring yourself. The sermon is not for the other people as much as it is for yourself. I do not plan a written sermon. I feel the spiritual atmosphere of the audience and fit the sermon to it. A sermon should not be like a sharpened knife, with resharpening between sermons. The sermon should inspire you with power overflowing inside with an endless supply of spirit flowing from you. If you give a good sermon, you can give another good sermon, and then an even greater sermon. That is the way it should be.

*Master Speaks 3-1-65*

5. Instead of always talking with preplanned notes, you have to use the spirit world, and speak out, having their cooperation. You have to develop practice in that area. When you pray before you speak or deliver a message, someone among your congregation will be perceptive enough, and you will see right there when that person is being used. This will solve many problems, and the whole congregation will be inspired. That will be a wonderful result. Suppose you have three people in the congregation who are inspired right there with you. You will notice them, and you must immediately work on them. Then they will turn away from their own problems, and come to you, and be quite helpful to you. Sometimes when you speak on the platform, only one person will be inspired. When you grasp that person, and give him energy right there, the whole congregation will share this kind of spiritual response. You have to evaluate and appraise the

situation. Suppose somebody in the congregation is sleepy; then you emphasize clapping your hands not necessarily for that person, but to emphasize your point. At the same time, it wakes him up. You glance at him eye to eye, and dark forces will go away. In the process of delivering this kind of talk, if one of the congregations is sleeping or something, you had better tackle and assault the problem before proceeding to the next step of the talk; otherwise, you will get into trouble. This is a spiritual battle. You people should realize this area and study it.

6. As a leader of the congregation, you should know what kind of atmosphere will appear when you conduct the meeting. If you can't know or decide what it will be, then don't decide your topics. You have to work out different ways. You have to find out the other way. Sometimes a spiritual leader should have the ability to decide if the topic should come from one of the congregation. When he sees a person, he knows what kind of occupation he has, etc., and you have to sense that through the spiritual training area, which takes some time.

7. In order to impress a person to whom you are going to talk, you can't talk directly about him—you have to talk about yourself, on behalf of the person to whom you are going to talk, about yourself, from his point of view. When you speak the Truth, spirit world will cooperate and send you some power, such as sorrow, or happiness, or some other kind of experience, and if you bring out these things, you will easily influence, or impress, or even inspire the person you are talking to. Instead of direct words or expressions at the time, you can use this vocabulary or semantic selection based on poetry, or a beautiful expression, prose or so forth.

8. To the scientist you have to talk scientifically, systematically, in an organized way. You have to discern his personality. Sometimes it's high, serene; some are dynamic like a full tower of water overflowing. You have to discern this type of personality, adjust, and adapt yourself in the way you talk to him.

9. You have to be an "I," you have to have faith in yourself, or otherwise you cannot help that person. "I" becomes the subject, and that person will be in the object position; in any circumstance this will apply. You should be in the subject position. You should have this kind of experience. The same thing holds when you have children, when you have to face them. You have to know how to face these things; even when there are hundreds of people in the congregation, you have to maintain this kind of helping situation, a working relationship between subject and object positions.

*Master Speaks (Berkeley) 1-12-72*

10. It is better to have gestures. You can bring the whole congregation together with natural gestures. With them, you can lead the congregation. Father has had experiences we haven't had. When he comes to the platform, evil forces appear. He must fight an intensive battle. He must fight

evil, talk, and deal with people. Satan's force works as long as one person makes a base. The speaker's job is to get rid of that. When he finds one person who is the target of Satan, that person is thinking of what the speaker will say next. Father doesn't respond to what that person is expecting. He talks of a different subject, then Satan can't invade. He is diverting the situation. He doesn't allow give and take between the speaker, the person and Satan. It is an intensive battle.

**11.** This is the battle. The speaker blows the evil force out of the congregation. He cannot retreat from this. When I come to the public, I know how to act. I know how the devil acts, too. I feel like I am going to an execution place. With this seriousness, the spirit world cooperates. I know what it feels like in the court before the verdict. I feel like that each time. This seriousness shortens the gap to spirit world.

**12.** The problem is: how to make closeness between himself and Heaven in the address. If you are self-centered, you can't battle evil to produce the atmosphere to save people. This time must be a time of sacrifice on the altar.

*Master Speaks 3-6-72*

**13.** You have to insert prayer before the lecture. When you do pray, you should really seriously pray to God as you would talk to a real person and refer in the prayer to the state of world sadness and political corruption, and seriously appeal with a real heart, and this student will be doubly impressed. The prayer may mean more than the lecture and will have a great powerful influence on the audience. The lecturer or preacher has to adjust himself powerfully to the environment supplied through prayer.

**14.** Three hours of preparation with prayer is necessary if you are going to present one hour of lecture. A one-hour lecture needs a three-hour preparation, with firm prayer, and then you will get it. You ask the question, "What can I do—I have no time?" Then you need sincere, serious prayer, if you have no time. In an irritating atmosphere, you are most anxious—that is the worst condition. You should be serious, and in a short period of time, pray to God. You must be serious; the same feeling as if you were in a courtroom receiving the judge's verdict. That serious a nature you must have. Then with this kind of a heart you come down and you grasp heaven. Stand at the pulpit, preach, and present the lecture; you will be rewarded. Is it clear now? You try, it works.

*First Directors' Conference 3-5-73*

**15.** When you want to give a lecture to the congregation, you want to have God speak through you, so you must have your mind and body united, or else God cannot be with you. And before speaking to the people, you must repent if your mind and body are separate. Pray before God in

repentance, shedding tears, and in deep prayer you must beg God's forgiveness, and then you can start talking. In that case you can be the spokesman of God. God may speak through you. The first step is for your mind to become one with God, and then your mind will become one with your body. In that case, God can work through you. Go on and try it, and it will prove true to you.

*Heart 3-30-73*

**16.** Sometimes you have to be resolved to become a sacrifice on this platform. With this determination if you give lectures, then all the listeners will be moved. You must be a man of motivation.

*Untitled Address on Training Plans 5-7-73*

**17.** After the speech, if you find your speech a failure, you are so ashamed of yourself, you want to escape from the listeners. The listeners must be sympathetic toward you. After the failure, you must feel you want to tear apart your lips. In repentance, you beat against your head and say, "This dull brain of mine—what shall I do?" In that case, you must study hard and repeat and repeat; then you will be successful. The world's foremost champions in athletic games are those who have practiced more than anyone else. Isn't that true? In proportion to how many times you have repeatedly practiced the lectures will your lectures be a success.

**18.** In order for you to be a dynamic lecturer, you must know the knack of holding and possessing the listeners' hearts. If there appears a crack in the man's personality, you wedge in a chisel and split the person apart. For the first few lectures you will just memorize. But after that you will study the character of your audience and adapt your lecture. If he is a scientist, you will approach him differently than a commercial man, artist, etc. The audience as a whole will have a nature and you must be flexible.

*Significance of the Training Session 5-17-73*

**19.** You must be able to grasp the nature of the lecture, so you must practice how to write on the blackboard, make charts and things like that. But try not to write too much, because it's time consuming. Sometimes you feel it is necessary for you to write things on the blackboard for the newcomers, but this is not necessarily so because the newcomers are apt to be distracted when you write too much. It is better for you to look into the eyes of the people rather than write.



**20.** You must know how to handle the atmosphere of the whole group. If you notice someone dozing off in that corner, you can walk to that side and people will feel strange that you are walking to that side. That person can feel your observation of him and come awake. In the public speech you can even pound on the table, but in using gestures you must try to do it naturally. There are many ways possible. You can employ jokes and sometimes even play pantomime in describing God. Let them figure out who or what you are describing. In that case you can hold the audience, and you must be keen in catching their response.

**21.** You must know that among the audience, there are people who would feel like objecting to what you are saying. Then what would you do? Don't wait until that person raises questions and shouts and screams and goes against you. That will break the whole atmosphere. Before he does that, you must attack him by giving your own testimony or another's testimony by saying, "When I first came to this movement, I was skeptical of this point, that point, etc. I was really mad at the lecturer, but then the thought came into my mind that such and such a thing really happened, and I was so moved to tears that I had a revelation; and so on. Then he will realize his situation. That can stop a person from questioning. You will see his eyes change. The spiritual war is won by the skill of the lecturer.

**22.** If you write too much, your own attention is focused on that, and you want to make sure you are spelling right. You cannot give a lecture heart to heart like that.

**23.** One act of yours, one utterance of yours will be analyzed or criticized by others. You must know that. You must conduct yourself normally. Some wear their ties too short, so that their buttons show. Some wear their neckties too long covering their belt. When you are here on this platform, if you look normal, tidy, they will forget about your appearance. But if your tie isn't right, then they will keep looking at you rather than listening to your words.

**24.** Some lecturers are lax and powerless, but if some power does not go out from you, the people cannot respond with power or strength. Your lecture must be pointed and forceful, but more than anything else you must have the feeling welling up in your heart of the strenuous effort of our Father in finding the Principle and the agony of our Heavenly Father's heart in trying to give the Principle to humanity. When you organize a good lecture, you will feel God's heart and the heart of our Father in finding the Divine Principle. If you deliver the lecture with warmth and zeal, they will long to see Father, and already they will feel God's heart.

**25.** The most important thing for you to realize is that you are the mediator between God and the audience. You must be able to relay what they are to God. You must let them know that the center of this truth is Father. The center of the truth and Father is, in turn, God. If you fail to do that, in a way, your lecture is a failure. You have to introduce God there; God is everything—there are so many materials for you through which to introduce God when you talk about give and take action, three stages of growth, purpose of creation. Don't forget you have to be the spokesman of

God and you put yourself in the position of God and Father, and then put your heart and determination into your lecture. The knack of it is to express what the persons need most.

**26.** If after giving the Principle of Creation, you notice that there is a good response from the audience, you can ask the question, "Are you touched to the heart by this Principle?" Then if you have an answer from them in the affirmative, you can go on saying, "In this dark world there has come a light of truth: the first one who brought the light and found the truth had to go through great difficulty." You can introduce Father right there. Some of them who are receptive to truth and who have been waiting will be able to sense the depth of this message. There have been people who have been longing to see the central figure, so they must feel cautious in order to see if he is the person they have been longing for. You can introduce Father in many places in the lecture in such a way that will move their hearts to feel God for the first time.

**27.** You have to connect God to the audience. If they come into contact with God, then the spirit world can help them. Those who are sent to the field, when they fail in their position, it is because they forget they are in the position of mediator to connect God and Father and they put themselves in the central position. Don't forget that you are the mediator between God and man, and the mediator must sometimes go back and forth. When a tree wants to grow wholesomely, the trunk must play the role of the mediator. With action it becomes wholesome and purposeful. The quicker the action is, the more the tree is a tree of life.

**28.** Don't say to yourself that you have to be a good lecturer, not only that but you must say to yourself that you must be a good mediator between God and man. In hoping to be a good lecturer, you are already forgetting how to connect God and man, and you are apt to place yourself in the position of Satan. You want to become the master of the people, master of the lectures, and then you cannot be better. You are substituting for Father, but you are not Father himself. Do you understand? (Yes.) You should want to be a good lecturer, but more than that you must be trying to be a good mediator.

**29.** When you gesture, try to put 50 percent or more of your power in the gesture if you are going to use it at all. If you want to have that kind of gesture, you must feel that you can pierce through the hearts of the people. When karate people break bricks, it is from their spirit and mentality more than their physical strength because they believe that they can do that. If you just say God's words then it's too weak, but God's dramatic movements pierce through their hearts. You must practice how to deliver God's speech and how to deliver the lecture.

**30.** Do you really feel that there is a God? Are you honest? (Yes!) In what way do you feel Him? Do you have Him in your brain, or feeling in your heart? You must have both. At the moment you think of Him, you must be able to feel a power welling up in your heart. With that in your heart don't worry about what kind of lecture you are going to give; God will help you. You have your antennae, your bridge to God, and if you tune up yourself with some of the channels, you can reach to God. In that case you are going to have a keen sense.

**31.** If you are on the platform you will see three or more dozing off, and it will be contagious. Then you have to stop that condition. As a lecturer you must wake them up before going any further. As a leader you must be able to move the hearts of the people. If you are not alert, enthusiastic or with ardor in everything, you can never move the hearts of the people—that's what you must remember.

**32.** Repeat and practice the lectures so you can be a good lecturer, but knowing how to move the hearts of the people is more important. The more you shed tears in giving the lecture, the more you can move the hearts of the people. First you must shed tears for your own sake in repentance. Then for the sake of the members. Why is it so? It is because man fell and the central figures had to shed tears, and through their tears we reach back to the original status—cleansing ourselves.

**33.** Have you ever been so serious as to cry for the sake of God, for the sake of yourself and for the sake of your members? Have you ever wept for the sake of your nation, for the world? You must know that God has been tearing all through history for the sake of His lost children. In the parable when the shepherd has lost one sheep out of one hundred, he feels loss and sorrow and goes out in search of the lost one. If you give the lecture with tearful eyes, that is the only way you can reach out to the people's hearts.

**34.** The only two points which you must remember in order for you to be good lecturers are: listen to more lectures from more people and practice so many times as to become good in delivering a powerful lecture. Then be a lecturer who can deliver with heart, sweat and tears. You, yourself, must shed tears right on the platform or else you cannot make people cry.

*After Lecture 5-26-73*

**35.** For instance, when I speak, I know that using the microphone I can speak just in a soft tone. But my philosophy is to have to sweat when I speak. A stream of perspiration just pours down my back. In speaking, I am pouring out my heart to be planted in the hearts of others. You must weep when you speak. I am using the interpreter, so it bars the way. But if I am speaking in English or Korean, there are many places where I have to weep. I must have the feeling of a man being drowned and asking for help. I am that serious, so before going on the stage to speak, I prepare my heart instead of preparing the manuscript. You can imagine how grave and serious I am when I talk. If you are like that, cooperation will come from the heavenly side, and it will touch the hearts of your audience.

**36.** In giving lectures don't just memorize and utter the words but pour out the heart through the lecture. If you are going to have people spellbound, you will sometimes yell and pour out your soul into the souls of others. What you are doing is something like that and it will penetrate the hearts of the listeners. When I do this, the listeners will speechlessly fall back.

**37.** When I prepared for a lecture, I would hate to have any visitors bothering me, disturbing me. I would just concentrate my whole efforts at preparing for the lecture and praying for the success of the lecture and I perspire all over. I am that serious and you must follow that example. You must be ready to give out the best part of what you have to others, preparing in prayer for that. To stand in public and give the lecture without preparation is something like being in the field, in the front line and fighting without a shield, or without armor. You must be that serious.

**38.** Don't you ever forget in your speech or in your giving lectures, God must be with you, or else your lecture will not be successful. You are in the position of the judge. You are in the place of the president of your country or in the place of God, Father. Sometimes you have to play the role of attorney, and you must be in the position of Jesus Christ and Father. If you cannot carry out your mission, you are going to be a failure! God cannot use you and you are apt to be fired. You are in the most dreadful position, as I said before, and there is no cheating possible before God.

*On Leadership 11-7-73*

**39.** The purpose of teaching the Divine Principle is to educate, train and discipline the people to have confidence under any other circumstances, any hardships.

*Address to Prayer and Fast Participants (I) 7-29-74*

**40.** Has anybody known that there is God and that there is also Satan, and that these two great powers have been struggling and fighting a fierce battle? No one knew that Satan and God were each struggling to have one individual on their side. No one knew about ideal families. They hardly knew anything. This is the crux of the problem. Those people who do not know much about God, and who know very little about Satan, how can they come to do God's work?

*On Approaching God 3-3-75*

**41.** If you teach the Principle with the aching heart of God, who lost his child, you would feel as if the child doesn't know you. Even though you're his mother or father, you have to plunge yourself into that feeling. Then you will get them.

**42.** The Principle should be taught with this kind of a heavenly heart, a feeling of looking for a lost child. But the child doesn't know you as a parent. With that kind of a feeling of Heavenly Father's aching sorrowful, searching heart, you have to teach and preach. Do not feel "I have to preach because I am obligated to teach three hours." When you do preach and lecture with this

heart, you are gaining heaven and earth in your hands. After more than 21 hours of preaching and lecturing with this heart, you won't even feel tired or exhausted. That is the attitude of the lecturer of the Divine Principle.

*Directives To Foreign Missionaries 3-20-75*

43. When I spoke in several of the auditoriums, the voice of opposition came from the audience. Was I scared? (No!) I felt more challenged at that moment, and in the case of the Berkeley campus auditorium, I used my own tactic, and they were conquered. I was considering all their tactics, and I knew that if I prolonged it, and then stopped it from coming in ten minutes, then they could be handled. Then there came a voice but it was somewhat withdrawn, and the voice was screaming in a small shrill tone, and I said, "Come what may! This is making this evening unforgettable." If I laugh louder than they do, my voice will drown theirs. When I used that tactic, the whole audience was on my side, clapping and applauding me. They are already defeated at that moment. I'm always on the defensive; before my speech I always plan how to fight back against opponents. And I sometimes feel thrilled. It's your way of thinking that matters.

*Who Will Be Responsible for the Providence of God? 3-23-75*

44. When you lack confidence to be a good lecturer, just imagine that God is speaking through your mouth, and just shout out, "Ladies and gentlemen!" and the next words will just naturally come out. With failure, you will say, "God is not speaking through me!" and then you can look back at me to find out that you have not been confident that Father is working with you. So, you shout again, "Ladies and Gentlemen! I'm here for you ... " and then say the next words. Try it for at least one week, and you will find yourself to be fluent. At one try, if you fail, don't shrink from trying. Try the second time, the third time, and after several tries you will have confidence. If you are really without confidence, you can memorize the whole chapter, and shout at an imaginary audience several times, and then you will gain confidence. You must have strong confidence.

*The Significance of Victory in Korea 7-1-75*

45. Words do not exist for their own sake, nor do deeds happen for their own sake. Words and deeds must serve some purpose. What is the qualification for speaking or acting? You must speak as a son or daughter of God, and you must act as a son or daughter of God.

46. Words are so powerful that they can build or destroy the world. Isn't that true? When your heart is established in the love of God, whatever language you speak is an expression of love. That

language may sound very harsh or unkind, but since it is from the love of God, it will always build, never destroy. The word is also a judge. If I speak about a definite standard, those words become a judge. If a happy-looking person is listening, he may immediately become very serious. Perhaps that person comes to me and says, "I did this and this; can you forgive me?" At that time a simple word of forgiveness can lift that person's morale instantly.

**47.** Love is so powerful that when you are based on heavenly love, your words become powerful as well. As long as that word is based on love, it will only build and never destroy. When you act from that heart, your action will further harmonize the entire universe instead of taking anything away from the universe.

**48.** Do not speak empty words.

**49.** It is so important to speak and act from your heart. Then wherever you go, you do not even have to prepare; your words are ready, and your deeds are ready.

**50.** Without knowing, without experiencing that love of God or becoming one with it, your words will be empty. No matter how much you speak, if your words are empty, your deeds will be empty. If you are standing over here proclaiming the love of God to the world, yet you cling to worldly joy and laughter, then your words have no foundation and there will be nothing solid behind them.

**51.** When you speak from the central point where God is, your words no longer come from you but from an unlimited reservoir, and you are intoxicated with love. In that particular position, you live and act and speak out of ecstatic joy with an elevated sense of accomplishment. Nothing that you do is your own deed or your own word; everything becomes a messenger or bridge for the love of God. Once you taste the love of God, then human life, human contact is a joy and stimulation.

*Word and Deed 1-30-77*

**52.** It is not flowery words that give inspiration but the living truth coming into your heart that makes you want to act.

*The Spirit World and the Physical World 2-26-77*

**53.** In preparing to give a sermon you have to really feel fearful of erring just the one inch that might damage the souls that you are responsible for. When you feel that you cannot afford to make the slightest mistake, then your sense of responsibility becomes acute. You have to pray with great

intensity. "Just help me through these few hours. I must speak to them according to Your will." When you speak with this sense of responsibility then you can deeply move those who listen.

**54.** If you want to give life to other people and save them then you yourself must be alive. If you would have others shed tears, then you must have experienced tears first. If you feel tears as you give a sermon, then those who hear you will also weep. You must first have these qualifications if you would lead a church. That is why your responsibility is difficult.

*How To Witness: To State Leaders 4-1-77*

**55.** If there is a receiving aspect which is eager to respond plus a giving aspect ready to give, then truly great inspiration will come.

*Our Pride 6-5-77*

**56.** My way is this: I will never press or persuade you in my sermons until I have mastered what I am talking about. That's why God and spirit world recognize me and support me. A true man of heart and conscience cannot help but support me.

*Mainstream of the Dispensation of God 11-19-78*

## FAMILY

---

1. The child's heart always expects. The father's heart always forgets the given gift. When a schoolboy makes a mistake in class, everyone laughs at him. As a parent of this child, you realize his embarrassment and you do not ridicule him. This is the heart of the parent and is the real relationship that should be developed in all appropriate situations. This should be the heart of all Divine Principle members.

2. Children are disciplined through true love. The parent may discipline very harshly, but the child accepts because the discipline comes from the heart of the father. The parent disciplines because he loves his child. When you are required to associate with a person whose clothing is ragged and smelly, you may be repulsed. But when you consider this person through the heart of the Father, your heart is broken. It is with this heart that you should see all of mankind. The sacrificial love of the parent is very great.

*Master Speaks 3-1-65*

3. It takes the Trinity to save one human life. In the Divine Principle, three families will work together to save one family. In this way we will develop them.

*Leaders' Address 5-1-65*

4. After a man and woman are blessed as husband and wife, the woman has to see the man as the representation of God, and she must have the yearning to him as a daughter holds to her father. To restore the historical Eve, the man has to receive his wife as God's daughter. To the woman, the man is like her father and she has to trust him to the point that nothing can equal to the trust. They have to co-work to create the greater value than the total accumulated value of their past experiences. Likewise, the man, to his wife, has to become like her son. The man has to have an adoration of her as a son has for his mother. Furthermore, you have to love each other to the point that there would be no morning or night without each other. Without the formation of such a tight union, the condition for the restoration cannot be constituted.

*The Ideal Mate 2-4-69*



5. Where would men want to meet God? Man would want to meet God where he can meet Him as his Father, and God can meet him as His child. That situation or place is the home. That is why we call God our Father, and He calls us His children. When children have grown up what do they do? If a man and woman marry, they build up the tradition of love among their family on the basis of their own experiences of God's love. As husband and wife, they are going to live or set the tradition of the love which they have respectively experienced. In the first stage the individual receives love vertically from God. Husband and wife, when they are united, have give and take of love horizontally. Then, when they give birth to children the vertical love goes to them. When a couple has children, they experience God's love for His children. With man as the center, we experience God's love from above, vertically. Man and wife love each other and play the role of father and mother giving love to their children. If that tie is unchangeable and strong, God is right there in the family. He will be unchangeable and always be with the family.

*The Formula for God's Providence 12-14-71*

6. When a couple is blessed in divine marriage, there is the battle left ahead of them. However, this time the two as one will be the warriors to fight against Satan. For a man to make his wife obey him, or for a woman to make her husband completely in accordance with her, is not so easy a job. They may think that they have become one, but just loving each other and having common interests with each other is not enough. To be truly joined into one, they must continue on the way of sacrifice. Sacrifice and service. After they have won the battle on the family level, there is still a fight left—that is, the right way centered on their children. This is a very complicated matter. Only after we have become victorious as husband, wife and children together, can we call our family the one having realized the principle of creation, the ideal of creation. First the father and mother become one and then the children must become one with them and form the perfect foundation of four positions. God has not seen any one single family on earth which has obtained that position. There is no individual who has obtained victory over the satanic power—not to speak of the family scale. The ideal of the unification ideology is not just for the individual to attain this goal but for the family to obtain it—including their children.

*The Fight Has Begun 1-9-72*

7. Those who are blessed actually do not have the qualification to be blessed, but when Father blessed those people he blessed them on that level, at that position. He presumed that all those couples would reach that position and, on that assumption, he blessed them. Without having these qualifications, we received blessing anyway. We must be so grateful; we cannot think of the blessing and that all those there could have the blessing of his or her spouse, wife, or husband, without tears; therefore, we must be grateful to each other. Husband or wife should think of his or

her spouse as his or her savior. Therefore, they cannot fight each other, and the husband cannot beat his wife. Our first families are in a position far surpassing the families of the satanic world. Therefore, those children born of those blessed couples can go automatically to the Kingdom of Heaven.

*Leaders' Speech 3-16-72*

8. A father's heart is always wanting to give everything to his son.

*One God-One World Religion 3-20-72*

9. Suppose there is a central family with him (Father) the nucleus. Then, if you try to become one with that family, you are already one with him both on the individual and on the family level. You must also be able to put yourself in the position of the True Parents. In other words, you must always be thinking of the central figure, and put yourselves there, into perfect oneness with him. What is there in that nuclear point? That's always the True Parents. Only having become one with that nuclear or central figure, you can and will become one with your spouse. And then you must go on trying to make other levels of people become one with him and with you, also. In that case, with those people together in harmonious oneness, if you work hand in hand for the great cause of God and for the sake of the whole of mankind, this world will at last be restored in the bosom of God.

*God's Day Midnight Address 1-1-73*

10. In the providence of God, your family is playing the role of a bridge to go through and across to the next level and stay there until we can save the whole world. Then what would you do to make your family a success in God's sight? It is not just for the husband and wife to love each other—sticking to each other. But in loving each other and doing everything, you must be doing that for the salvation of the nation and for the salvation of the whole world. In order for you to be able to save the whole world you must know that you must be able to sacrifice your nation, and your family for the nation and the world. We are taught that we have to make an offering to reach God or to reach the salvation of the whole world. That means that what we are going to save at the cost of sacrifice is greater than the thing we are going to sacrifice. When you are going to save your family at the sacrifice of yourself, you have already obtained a bigger thing—your family—at the sacrifice of yourself. And when you are going to save your nations, at the sacrifice of your family, you will have gained the nation, which is greater than your family, and so on.

*Our Fatherland 1-17-73*

11. First of all, you must belong to God, you must be able to receive God's love. Next, you must be able to receive whose love? Whose love would you want to receive next? Love between

husband and wife is the next stage. Then children's love—with those two put together, God will work through them; and in the love of God, they can multiply and the children will come about. This is the point where the three lines meet. Isn't that true? You must know then that God, the husband and wife and the children—all those four put together are the ideal form of humanity. From here we want to return love—children's love to their parents. The father and mother together will elevate the children's love to reach God. The parents together with children are headed for the goal of God's love. In other words, the father and mother together will attract children's love and pull it up towards the center. The three put together will attract God's love towards the center so that the four points will become one in the parents at the center in perfect love. Is everything clear to you? So, the parents must be an example of love for the children to follow and grow. In the first stage you must be such parents that your children will be very proud of you, thinking of you as the best parents in the world—better than any king, any person in the world. They must feel that you are the highest, the best and the most exemplary people in the whole world. Those three will be together and will meet at this point. God wants the children to resemble the parents, and by attracting and elevating their love, they come together in oneness. You must know that as the parents you are in the position of God. Your love towards your children must be that of God towards all mankind.

**12.** Man and woman united is the core of the whole world.

**13.** To go back we can say that this person is born or created by God for the sake of God first. In order to resemble God, she must take her spouse as being in the position of God; belonging to God, her husband is God's before being hers. She, also, before belonging to her husband, belongs to God. In that way they must be united into one, as husband and wife. In order for us to make what belongs to God as ours, you must be perfectly united into one with your spouse, and then, by resembling God He will abide in you and you in Him and what is God's is yours and what is yours is God's. With those three put together, God's love is yours and your love is God's, and you can claim your love as yours. Only by enjoying that perfect love can you claim love as yours. Do you know what I mean? You cannot claim even yourself as yours unless you go through or possess the love between husband and wife. That love must resemble God's. When those three are together in oneness, God's love as yours and your love as God's, then you can claim God's love as yours.

**14.** I must teach you to love God more than you love me. Then you can love me; and you will be mine and I will be yours. Without receiving God's love, you cannot really become one with Father, whom God loves. Father would have you love your spouse as you love him. In that love, your children would be multiplied. You can claim them when you love them as God Himself loves them. You must love them as you love your spouse. After that, you may love your children more than your spouse. It's not a sin, or against the law.

*Change of Blood Lineage (II) 1-19-73*

15. More than anything else, you must think that your marriage is for your lineage, for your descendants.

*God's Grief 1-27-73*

16. You need your parents. How long do you need your parents? 10 years? We need them for eternity. When you make a straight line, who is the center to make the straight line? That is not you but your parents. You must think of your children to make a straight line and teach and educate your children to stand on a straight line.

17. Parents came representing God. This means children must obey their parents.

18. Parents must learn from grandparents and children from parents so they must make a straight line and one tradition.

19. The parents are subject, and the children are objects, and the husband is subject and the wife, object. So, when the woman is like earth, the husband is like heaven. This means heaven must cover earth and heaven must protect earth. The husband must protect the wife.

20. The ones who do not respect old people are doomed to destruction.

21. Man must live for parents and children. Work as a mediator between parents and children. By doing this man can become centered.

22. Anytime the husband or wife want to go to each other, they must be free. So, this means everything must become one. That is ideal.

23. Fighting between husband and wife cannot be permitted. It is a sin if you make your parents cry because of you or for a husband or wife or if you make your children cry because of your own benefit.

24. Those families which formed the four positions are ones that God wants to put in the center of the cosmos because they are where the most precious love is stationed. Those who live such a life on earth are welcomed in the spirit world everywhere. They are free to go through any of the 12 gates. Such a family will be welcomed by the whole world.

*Untitled—San Francisco, CA 2-9-73*

25. This is the spouse, this is man—female and male. They want to become one here; by what means can they do that? No knowledge, no authority or position, no wealth can make them united into one. What at all can make them into one? Love. Love alone can do that. When they become united into perfect oneness, this oneness must not be self-centered but God-centered.

26. You, as the central figure, must be loving your spouse as God would have you love your spouse—as God would love your spouse; and in loving your parents, you must be loving them as God would have you love them and as God would love them· and in loving your children, you must be loving them as God would have you love them and as God would love them. If you do that the children will do the same toward you and their grandparents: and the parents will do the same to reach you and their grandchildren. That is the measure of love, that is the tradition.

27. Well, how would you know if a certain couple can enter the Kingdom of God? By their loving each other alone, they are not entitled to the Kingdom. When they love their parents dearly as they would love God and as God would have them love their parents, then they are entitled to the Kingdom of God. And, when the couple raise their children, they must not think that the children are theirs, belong to them; but they are God's, and the parents are responsible for them, raise them up and educate them to be God's children. If you love them in that way and are concerned with them in that way alone, you are entitled to the Kingdom of God.

*Path of Advancement for Our Faith 2-23-73*

28. Suppose there is a couple in your family, and they have some differences and a distance between them. Would it be all right for a woman to stand here, calling to her husband, "Come to me and you can become one with me," while the husband insists on his wife coming closer to him, to be united with him, and he is just standing there in his own place? Would that do? No. When you keep the subjectivity in your own love, selfish love, then true oneness in divine love can never come about. Then what is true love at all? This one would not want to come to this one to become one; neither would this one want to come to this side to become one with him—but both, when they come closer and closer to meet at one point in the middle, this can be true love. In other words, only by both of them denying themselves can they really become one with each other. That is the standard of true love. That's what it is; you must remember that. That's what we call the central love with two together. If and when you are put together like this, the love will have a circular motion and in the circular motion there is nothing like "yours" and "mine"—just a perfect oneness, like a propeller whirling, just one harmonious wholeness will be there.

29. In true love, no one can invade, and no one can interfere. Both must be obedient to each other; both must be willing to be united with each other, and in utter oneness they will enjoy harmony and beauty. You may say, "Oh no, I hate the word "obedience." Why do I have to obey my husband, obey my wife? I want to be freed from that bondage then, and I want to be a free person." But in true love—obedience, loyalty and surrender—everything is possible, and you are not humiliated by it.

*Our Determination to Win 3-1-73*

**30.** Unity is the measure of your love—joy in marriage.

*Heart 3-30-73*

**31.** When we talk about our parents, it means father and mother. Then when we talk about parental love, it means love from our father and from our mother. When we are loved by our parents, the love we experience comes right from birth. As long as our parents are alive, we receive their love from our childhood or youth until adulthood.

**32.** Parental love towards children is love on the vertical level. That love can come on the base of one to many. The parents can love many children. But can a husband love many wives, or a wife many husbands? Which love is more precious? (Parental!)

**33.** Still the parents would begin to love you and love you on and on. That's not the love out of duty, but you enjoy the love you are bestowing on your children. You don't calculate, you don't plan to love, but you just spontaneously love. In loving your spouse, you are willing to love and initiate love, you don't calculate or plan. You don't intend to love—that kind of love can't be said to be real love.

**34.** Without their children the parents would not be able to experience parental love. By receiving love from their own parents, they know what it is to receive parental love. But without having their own children, they don't know what it is to have parental love towards children.

**35.** What brings harmony in a family, and what brings rupture in a family? It is always the question of love. If and when the tie of love is severed, there comes rupture. When there is unity and harmony in love, there comes happiness.

**36.** When you want to love your spouse, you don't calculate, saying "If I give out this love, so much will be attained." You just want to give out your love. Then, it will turn around and something more will be attained. If both want to receive love from the other, then there is a stoppage of love. But if both want to give out then both will receive this ideal love.

*The Brothers and I 4-8-73*

**37.** Have you ever quarreled between blessed couples? The question of love always brings a quarrel in the family. The woman may think her husband is loving her less than he used to, and that's the seed of her quarrel. From the man's part, too, his wife seems to be reserved in devotedness, and he is so greedy as to want utter devotedness from her. Why is it so? It is because love should be unreserved—and if you are self-centered, if a little bit or a tiny fragment of ego is

there, we cannot call it total love in the true sense. You must deny your whole being in loving your spouse. If a particle of you is left there, your love is not a wholesome one. Love, in the true sense, must be like that. Do you understand? So, if you find yourself self-centered, you must shake off the particle of yourself playing the role there.

**38.** Between the couples, your standard of love must be this: when you look at your husband, you must think how close is he to God, to our Father, to the standard set up in the movement? If your wife is fading away from that standard, she is falling away. There must be that standard of your love.

*Significance of the Training Session 5-17-73*

**39.** Marriage is like heaven and earth meeting together and being united into one centered upon you. On the horizontal level, I am responsible for the whole nation in marriage. In that sense, if you deny your wife, it means to deny the earth and to deny all the people on the horizontal level, the nation. When you love her, it means you love the whole earth and love your nation. You are going to love the nation through your wife. If you are not loving your wife, you have no face before the earth, before your nation. Then can divorce be possible in our movement?

*Relationship Between Men and Women 5-20-73*

**40.** When you are in love with each other, however high a position the man is in, either he wants to come down to meet her, or she wants to come up to meet him, to become one. There is no such notion as high or low. They are naturally drawn together as a magnet, and their love is controlled on the horizontal level.

*Those Who Are Left 8-4-74*

**41.** Happiness of children cannot come without experiencing parental love.

*Our Hope 8-20-74*

**42.** What's the definition of wonderful parents? Those parents are so close to your heart, and relate to you so closely, so that you are in the very core of the parents' heart, and the parents also remain in your heart.

43. Separation from the loving parents is the most fearful thing.

*Let Us Set the Record 9-11-74*

44. I'm the example to the husbands of the blessed families, so all the husbands in their own families must go through all those three stages: the stage of paying indemnity for himself, for his wife and for his children. Then wives must be obedient to their husbands, and the children must be obedient to their fathers.

*The Present and the Future 12-15-74*

45. You know we are to live for each other. We are to exchange our lives. We are to fulfill each other's lives. This is the beauty and happiness of life.

*God's Way of Life Day of Hope Banquet 9-17-74*

46. You must be God's objective incarnation of love. With that standard, you must strive to that goal whether you die or live, and that must be your prime objective. Therefore, we must be humble and try to fill up our deficiency; and longing for and loving each other, we must pursue that goal at the cost of anything.

47. Because Father is laying the foundation for the world, you are connecting yourselves to the family, tribe, and nation. Therefore, you must think of Father first, no matter what. Such an attitude and thought should be the center of the family. You must realize that the coming Messiah is opening up the way for the family, clan, nation...and for the world. Father is working ahead of you for the restoration of the world; then, you must work harder than Father: sacrifice everything but be grateful. Unless you become such a person, you cannot stand before heaven to inherit the true tradition of family.

48. There is so much to do in this world. Even in your mind, you must be longing for the standard of love; and pray when you look at your children, pray when you look at your husband or wife, pray with tears in your eyes for the world for which you are longing.

49. When you have children, you have the responsibility to protect and love those children for twenty-four hours a day on behalf of God; but you must not love your children more than God. If you nurse your baby three times a day, each time you should love God more than your baby. When you make love to each other, even at that moment you must thank God for it. And you should



constantly check each other as to whether or not you are doing any dishonor to the heavenly tradition of love. Through that love, God's love flows to you; and through that love, the children God loves will be born. And you should not inject any bad elements into the new life.

**50.** Sacrifice all you have for the welfare of humankind and be grateful to all in order to restore the world. And therein should lie the pride of a blessed couple.

*Father's Speech to Blessed Couples 9-22-74*

**51.** When you are sacrificial with each other, you will be good couples. When you give birth to your children, you must raise them, educate them in the ideal way. You are going to pioneer your way, building an ideal world, but you must remember that even God has not been able to restore Adam and Eve to perfection in 6,000 years. You must have your family as the base and defend yourself from the satanic invasion. You must build your home and the nation and the world into ideal ones; it is a very difficult task.

*The Completion of Our Responsibility 10-28-74*

**52.** The first article in the family code must be that the man must obey his parents and his wife and the woman must obey her parents and her husband. You cannot do things at your own will.

**53.** Your parents are like the roots of the tree, while you and your spouse are in the position of the trunk of the tree. Your children are in the position of the flowers or fruit. If a tree is diseased, would you cut off the trunk or root? Even though a tree is diseased, and you cut off the trunk, still the root may grow again. So, we must realize the importance of the root of the tree. If the root is sound and intact from any disease, the tree will grow again. So, the root is the most important thing. God is the root.

**54.** Both you and your spouse must be loving your parents. The love between husband and wife must come from parental love. The love between husband and wife is a copy of the love between the parents whose love comes from grandparents, etc. Then we finally reach God. God is the root of love. So, we must think of God as the most important existence.

**55.** When I look at my children quarrelling with each other, I sometimes leave them alone, because in that way they learn how not to quarrel. Sometimes I would scold them and punish them, but in the next moment they have forgotten about it. They are in the process of growing and their

notion of how to love their parents and their brothers and sisters is not quite fixed. But as they grow, their way of thinking will mature.

**56.** Quarrels centered on love, the growth of the family and the well-being of the family are all right. When I say a quarrel between brothers and sisters is all right, it is because however fiercely they may have quarreled, brotherly love cannot be cut.

**57.** In the Orient we have the phrase, "education in the womb." So, we teach pregnant women to think of beautiful things and see and hear beautiful music. It will affect the baby in a good way.

**58.** If there is anyone or anything that would break the tie of love between you and your parents, that would be the most hideous enemy.

**59.** The motivation of love between father and mother is to give birth to children and we are indebted for that.

**60.** Your husband is like the seed, and you are like the field for the seed to be planted. Man is in the center and when he whirls around, he is stable on the solid axis while other members of the family will be whirling around with him. When the axis is moved to another place it means the whole world will lose its center. Then it is natural for the woman to come and form a family obeying the husband.

**61.** If your husband goes to the west, you must be westbound, when he turns to go to the north, you must be on his side. You must follow him wherever he goes. You must move around wherever he goes and, in that way, alone there will be a circular motion to make the family prosperous.

**62.** If the husband follows the wife, what will happen? That is not the way you should behave. You should be prepared to follow and obey your husband. The center point must be one, not two. If the center point can move about from place to place, changing every day, there will come to be disharmony. The family will collapse.

**63.** When you are really in love with your parents, then you know they love your brother or sister so much that you must love him or her equally. Before marriage your love towards your brothers and sisters is practice for love towards your future spouse. Having brothers in your family you know what men are like and you learn how to love men. When boys have sisters, they come to learn how females react to things and they learn the way of thinking and life. They come to love them. You are being trained by your brothers and sisters, trained to love your spouse, your parents, and your future descendants. Only through fraternal love will your horizontal love reach the people of the world. So, brothers and sisters must be loving each other. You must learn the love of brothers and sisters from parental love. You must not quarrel with one another.

**64.** Our parents are unique, unchanging, and eternal. Those three qualities, unique, unchanging, and eternal are the attributes of parental love.

- 65. You must realize the blessedness of having your parents' love which never changes.
- 66. Parental love cannot be exchanged for gold or diamonds.

*Am I Really Needed? 11-10-74*

67. In our ideology, when you are made into couples, you must become one. Then with the magnetic power of love operating your family, you can attract other families and end the disunity of other families. You will win more and more families to our side. An ideal couple cannot be found when you enjoy material wealth, when you drive luxurious cars, eat nutritious food, wear glittering clothes and things like that. But when you live with poor conditions where you go through miseries and difficulties and still your family shines, then people will know that you have an ideal family life. In the corrupted world, where families are disunited, your family must become the norm for corrupted families. Your family must be able to play the role of a lighthouse in the corruption and darkness of the outside world.

*The Boundary Point of Victory 2-23-75*

68. The source of love coming from God will be multiplied through parents first. If you separate yourself from your parents, it means you are cutting yourself off from God.

69. Being the parents, can you separate yourselves from your children? Separated, you will become satanic. United, you will become divine. Those three levels must be existing together, so if you separate from your parents and your spouses and your children, that's a satanic act.

70. When you have children, you are in the position of the parents, which means you are in the position of God to the children, to His children. So, you must, in raising your children, be like God, caring for your children, and loving them as God would. In the ultimate sense, you must raise your sons and daughters to be like God, to be as perfect as God Himself.

71. You must raise your children to be the source of love to others.

72. You can see many beautiful things between parents and children. Parents would not eat good food, but would keep it for their children. They would want their children to eat the good food. The children, on their own part, would not eat it, but would insist that their parents eat it. That kind of thing goes on between parents and children.

*The True Pattern of Family Life 3-7-75*

73. Your parents are a symbol of sacrifice for you. There's no comparison to the parental love toward you.

*Let Us Repay Our Debts 3-10-75*

74. What is the parent's heart? Even if three children are there, the parents are ready to die for the three children. You have to feel this kind of role, day, and night, all the time ready to die for these three children.

75. What is a parent? Before the parents go to bed, they let the children go to bed. Parents cook for children and feed them. When the children are sick, even though you are sick, you serve, and love them before you take care of yourself. That's a parent!

76. You are in the parental position. A parent must dress and eat for the children. If your children are not well dressed, how can you even dare to buy a luxurious dress? That is Satan's work! You are in the parental role.

77. The parental heart is to give more to the children even though you have nothing. You do everything more than the children. You go to bed later, and you get up earlier than the children.

*Directives to Foreign Missionaries 3-20-75*

78. When you dedicate yourself to God, you must dedicate not only your physical body, but your spirit and all your senses as well as your belongings. Everything must belong to God first.

*Speech to Los Angeles Family 3-24-75*

79. You all should learn from Mother. If your husbands are working for the benefit of mankind, for justice and righteousness, you must never complain. I want you to even drag your husband to his public mission if he's reluctant to do that.

*The Significance of Victory in Korea 7-1-75*

80. If there is unity between a husband and wife, your goal is set. But you must also have a clear picture of what it is. You must know the contents of what you are going to attain, and you need financial strength as well.

*Training for Victory 10-2-75*

**81.** In your marriage you are setting a new tradition of God, leaving your footprints as a public-minded couple. If we say that the right leg represents the husband, and the wife is represented by the left leg, then it's clear that you must not become a cripple. You should be a balanced couple.

*Perfection and Gratitude 10-3-76*

**82.** In a family, for example, there is generally some law, even though it is unwritten. Obedience to the law will bring harmony between the parents as the center of the family and their children. That unity brings the family into greater happiness. According to their own virtues or particular morality, the parents establish certain principles by which they want to mold that particular family. If the children are obedient, then those principles are actualized.

*The Age of Judgment and Ourselves 11-21-76*

**83.** In the many different channels and circuits of love the greatest of all is the love between parents and children. It is like a trunk line, and no love is more sacrificial or more beautiful.

**84.** We must come to the one important principle of the universe. Parental love is closest to the universal truth because that is the love between God and God's own children.

**85.** God is colorblind.

*The Benefit and Grace of this Time in History 12-19-76*

**86.** What is the definition of the ideal family? The ideal family possesses the eternal love of God; the ideal family possesses the everlasting love of husband and wife, and the ideal family will have love between parents and children. These three eternal and lasting loves combined together will make an eternal family.

**87.** If God were coming to Adam's house, would God call Adam and say, "I'm coming; prepare my dinner." In the sight of God, that is absolutely unacceptable. The children's home is the parents' home. The parents' home is the children's home.

**88.** Here in America, when a little baby comes out of the nursery in the hospital, he or she goes right into a separate room at home. The babies seldom sleep together with their own parents. Therefore, they cannot feel the warmth of love from their parents. They are very seldom fed by their mother's milk. Not sleeping together with their parents, the children are just like pets. You should not treat your children like that.

**89.** It is a beautiful scene when a couple of children come and want to sleep together with their father and mother. It's all right. Accept them. If there's not enough room, then sleep upside down, one head this way, one head that way. Organize a little better! The children may actually think it's uncomfortable to sleep between their big parents, but they feel good. The next morning, they say, "Mommy, I want to do that again!" Children must feel the temperature of their parents' bodies.

**90.** Let's say a good thing happened in a heavenly home. Then what is the first thing that happens? They share it. If a good thing happens to Eve, she wants to share it with Adam. She calls, "Adam, where are you? Come here!" If something good happened to him, he would call Eve, and God is the same. It's wonderful.

*The Kingdom of God on Earth and the Ideal Family 1-1-77*

**91.** The hearts of parents and the heart of God have much in common. The greatest love in this universe is parental love. This love is most pure because it is absolutely unselfish.

**92.** Everyone respects the pious son and daughter who are faithful to their parents because that piety is approved by the universe.

**93.** A true parent will teach you to become a sacrificial person. Forgetting about themselves, parents emphasize being sacrificial for others. They will say, "You go and love the world the way I loved you." Such people are true parents.

*Word and Deed 1-30-77*

**94.** Parental love has no end. Even though the children become senior citizens, the parents still consider them their sons and daughters, feeling the same intensity of concern and love that they always bestowed upon them. If a grandmother is 150 years old and her son is 120, she will still say to him, "Watch out for traffic when you go outside." Such beautiful warmth and concern for children will not be tarnished with age.

**95.** Parents deeply suffer if their child makes a grave mistake, perhaps becoming a criminal, but that does not break or lessen the love of the parents. They find themselves giving out more compassion, love, and sympathy, and feeling even greater anxiety for their child in jail. That is the heart of the parent.

**96.** The parent has the heart of forgiveness. That is unconditional love.

**97.** True parents are those who live solely for the sake of their children. Truly pious sons and daughters are those living for the sake of their parents.

**98.** Once you know the spirit world's standard of justice, you will be serious about maintaining harmony within your family. A husband and wife must seriously repent for their quarrels, even over a period of several months if necessary. Disunity between parents and children is also serious.

*The Spirit World and the Physical World 2-6-77*

**99.** Your foundation of life should be built on the Principle when you are young. Before that true sensitivity of love begins to blossom. When you practice God's principle as a youth and grow up in that atmosphere then when the sense of love comes it will automatically become God's love. If you have been brought up in that environment, then you see and hear things from God's point of view.

*The Ideal World of Subject and Object 2-13-77*

**100.** There is only one way that children can become one with their parents: in willing obedience to them.

**101.** The scene of a mother nursing her child is the most beautiful scene in the universe. When you hold that child to your breast, you must feel that you are feeding the universe, that you are breathing with the universe. When you are smiling and feeding the baby you must feel that you are communicating with the universe about your love, your ideal, and your life. You can communicate with the rest of the universe through your child, who is the visible form of God's love there in your arms.

**102.** In the garden of Eden if God had blessed Adam and Eve they may not have had beautiful clothes or even a wedding gown to wear. They may have been blessed naked without shame. Later Adam and Eve, as father and mother, would have dwelled in a place of beauty, holding their child together, God would have been moving with them wherever they went. Eve would have praised God and her husband singing, "My husband is the living, visible form of God. I can live with God." The baby in her arms would have the manifestation of the love life and ideal of God and would have linked their lives to eternity from generation to generation. Eve would have been completely content. Adam, too, would have praised God and his wife, the manifestation of the love of God, and his child, the promise of the future. What about God'.? When a child is born, the grandfather's attention is always focused on his grandchild. Likewise, 'when Adam and Eve held their child, God's attention would not have been on them but on their child. As Adam and Eve looked at the

child God would have been looking over their shoulders smiling from ear to ear. Can you imagine that scene? Can you become that Adam? Can you become that Eve?

**103.** Parental love is capable of forgiving the worst criminal even when that criminal is on his way to be executed. Parental love is capable of forgiving the enemy who intends to kill the parent. Even as an enemy is aiming his weapon, a person of parental love can still extend his hand in blessing and forgiveness. Only parental love is capable of doing that, and that is precisely how God feels and how God acts.

*The Blessing 2-20-77*

**104.** In a family when the husband comes home and his children run to greet him the first thing he says to the children is, "Where is your mother?" The wife is the same way. If she goes out shopping somewhere, when she comes back home many children are there, but the first thing she asks is, "Where is Daddy?" Why? It is because of a longing for love, a feeling of "Where is my love?" What can fill this vast universe? Not even air can fill it. We can only fill it with love.

**105.** Can you say with confidence, "My husband is the best in the whole world because of his inner nature, and therefore my child is the one whom God can love the most. I too, am completely one with God and His love." How can you become like that? God will look at you with His eyes filled with love if you can be like that. When you are filled with love, nothing looks ugly or hateful. If you are truly in love, then you can handle the soiled sheets or clothes of your spouse and still not feel that they are dirty. When you have absolute love for another then even the dirtiest thing about them actually appears clean. Some married people have experienced this to a certain extent.

*Our Family in Light of the Dispensation (I) 3-1-77*

**106.** When parents have an absolutely sacrificial, giving love, the beauty of an ideal child can be conceived.

**107.** You women exist for the purpose of serving men, but this formula does not apply only to you women. A man has strong, masculine features to serve a woman. God tailor-made women and men to serve each other. From the beginning of existence man was made for woman and woman was created for man. This is a fundamental principle of God's creation. God did not create you for your own sake. He created you to serve each other and to become men and women united in perfection. We must live up to that ideal.

*Our Family in the Light of the Dispensation (II) 3-6-77*



**108.** It is parental love that whenever there is some joy parents want to give that joy and increase that joy for the children, and when there is sorrow and hardship and tragedy, they want to bear that hardship and lighten the burden for their children. That's the way parents think, and at the same time that's the way the earth also thinks.

*My Life 3-12-78*

**109.** Parents who love their children in actual deed become servants to their children. No matter how dirty a child is, the parents just change his diapers.

**110.** The true husband is like a servant to his wife; she may not even ask for anything, but he knows what she needs and voluntarily serves her with a loving heart. The true husband's actual position is almost like a servant. The wife's position toward her husband is also that of a servant. If you want to live a true life as husband, wife, society, or nation, you must live the truth of service. By living and serving others you become true.

*Who Was I 3-13-77*

**111.** Parents and children will become eternally one even if the mother is a hunch back and the father the ugliest cripple under the sun; no one can separate them from their destined relationship as parents and children. Could you exchange your parents for someone more attractive? You are part of them and cannot separate yourself from them. You are the result of their harmony, their life and their ideal. Don't you feel some built-in human instinct to defend them from criticism? Why do you feel so strongly about them? You are connected to them, and when something is harmful to them it is automatically harmful to you. Instinctively the loving relationship between parent and child creates the impulse to protect because in this universe there is an automatic protective force that preserves the entity of love. Now you can understand logically what you may have only felt in the past.

**112.** As long as there is a warm and loving atmosphere in a home, the children would never want to leave. But even if the children may go away to the hippie life, if there is a loving atmosphere in the home they will feel pulled back and repentant.

**113.** The application of the truth means that as much as you love each other as husband and wife with the same intensity you must be able to love your parents and your grandparents. That same love will bring one heart in your home which is the building block of the Kingdom of God on earth. You and your family will become the nucleus or brick of the Kingdom of God on earth, and when many families come together, they will make up a society, nation, and kingdom on earth.

**114.** Man represents heaven and woman represents earth, and because a man is in the subject or aggressive position, he will take the initiative. Are you that kind of man or not? You are stubborn and instead of listening to anybody, you want to be your own boss. You only listen when the truth convinces you and then reluctantly you have to yield. A man goes straight forward to where love is; nothing can conquer a man except truth and love. Men are that stubborn.

**115.** Now you know what the brotherly love under our ideology must be like. You must love each other as parents would love you, as husband and wife would love each other. By putting those loves into practice among yourselves, there is an ideal and harmony that can come about. Among the elders, brothers, and young ones too, the same types of love must be experienced. In that love you must miss each other. You want to see each other, and you cannot have a moment of your own without others; you miss each other that much.

**116.** How about women? Do women want to take the initiative or be the recipients of love? Do you women want to receive a proposal from a man, or do you want to make the proposition? Women are built to receive, and men are built to initiate action. God has also given men and women particular roles in loving with men taking the initiative and women the more passive role.

**117.** Heaven and earth become one when men and women become one with man representing heaven and women representing earth. But husband and wife are greater than the universe: your wife is not merely one woman or your husband merely one man. Each represents the entire universe. Because love is the moving force to conquer the universe, the entire universe will listen when you face each other with love. What kind of husband do you want? Do you want a husband who only drives you like a slave, or do you want a husband who looks at you as being even greater than the universe? Which kind of wife do you want? You each want to have that kind of preciousness.

**118.** It is natural that young men and women in their teens become very romantic, talking about the universe, losing themselves in music and reading romantic poems. They come to realize they can communicate with the universe, that the universe is representative of themselves. When older teenagers think of becoming men or women they view their lives with the highest ideals and most beautiful dreams in their hearts, dreaming in terms of the universe, and equating their lover to the universe.

**119.** Men and women actually start out from different extremes, but when they bring themselves together, they feel the entire universe resounding with each step they take and all of nature responding. That is young passion. When young men and women become serious, God also becomes serious. When they are very dramatic and romantic, God becomes romantic. When a young man and woman just engulf each other in a heavenly collision of love the explosion is greater than thunder. When young passions collide even God will be shook up! When God is a part of young passion, that love is an eternal one, not a cheap thrill but something serious and precious.

**120.** Should the love between husband and wife be stabilized in one solid central point or should it be blown around by the wind? The love of husband and wife should become a stabilizing force like the bubble in a horizontal level. Diamonds also have a certain stable structure that will not change. When this universal force of passionate love brings husband and wife together to be completely melted into one, then are they poor, oppressed prisoners or can they really feel freedom and joy in their love? That is the kind of adults you must become, not just foolhardy and superficial. You must concretely anchor yourselves as a stabilizing force of the universe.

*The Greatest of All Is Love 3-20-77*

**121.** Love can be experienced in every way with all your senses. When you men and women want to get married then you really desire that kind of ideal love. When a perfect husband and wife are together, they will look beautiful; there is much beauty to be seen when any male and female get together, but men and women were to radiate the most supreme beauty of all.

*The Resurrection of Jesus and Ourselves 4-10-77*

**122.** In our home there is complete mixture of the spiritual side of life and the physical side of life merging into one. The children are receiving important things in dreams, particularly visions of each member of the family in the future. They are telling each other, "I saw you in a dream, and you appeared this way." Parents should put these experiences together, organizing and analyzing them in a beneficial way.

**123.** In order to make a child happy, you must provide him or her with the love of a father and mother. Even more than that, the parents must give their children the love of God; they must represent God and His love must be made visible through them.

**124.** Without the action of love, without self-giving, there is no way that you will find true love as a husband or wife, or the true love between parents and children. Your suffering in the process will never be in vain. That is the most beautiful principle. The greater your suffering, the more precious and valuable is the realization of your love. When your suffering is greater, then your love as husband and wife will become more precious. When your suffering is greater, your love for your children will become more precious and valuable.

**125.** To make a long story short, when you have no capability to love your spiritual brothers and sisters and your spiritual children, do not even talk about a perfect marriage or perfect children because you cannot yet be given those things. You must steadily build yourself by sacrificially giving your love to spiritual sons and daughters, and brothers and sisters. Only then will you find perfect love in your home between husband, wife and children.

*God and the Building of the Kingdom of God 4-17-77*

**126.** The truth of the matter is that women mature before men do. Women become adults at the age of 18, but men generally take three more years maturing at the age of 21.

*True Parents' Day from the Historical Point of View 4-18-77*

**127.** Your heart will resemble the heart of God when you steadily try to serve the well-being of your family every day without change. That giving and serving is equivalent to the actions of God. Then you possess true authority more than anyone who is trying to command everyone else.

**128.** If you can be totally unselfish, then you can offer certain advice sometimes even to your father and mother.

**129.** The couple which assumes that the church should support them is one kind, while the husband and wife who want to not only support themselves and not be indebted to the church, but even want the church to be indebted to them is another kind of couple. No matter how early you were blessed, if you are trying to use the members and the church for your own benefit, you are no good. That is exactly how I think about myself. There is no exception to this; that is the way of goodness.

**130.** True parental love is always given for the sake of the child. Because it is not measured by money or by honor, parental love does not tarnish or change.

*Men of Justice, Rise Up 5-21-77*

**131.** Why is there divorce? When people marry only to make themselves happy, their relationship cannot last long. Because these people are selfish and greedy they take more and more through the years from their family, society, nation and world. In the end, they find that they have lost everything. Man has come to the point that he must change his way of life 180 degrees by living to give love. Then the world will certainly change.

**132.** When men and women are separated they have very different values, but when a man and woman marry and are united into one by love they share each other's values and characteristics. Through love the value of each becomes equal, with both sharing in their total value, knowledge, and honor.

**133.** Boys and girls are very different when they are young with boys being aggressive rascals who destroy everything, and girls being interested in quiet games and dolls. When we see their drastically different characteristics, there seems to be no chance for boys and girls to become one.

They are so far apart that it is almost impossible to unite the two when they are young. Nothing else can bring boys and girls into one but the amazing, mysterious power of love.

**134.** In looking at human behavior, we see that women always send out waves of love first, trying to be attractive so that they will be detected. Men are rather dumb and slow in responding. Neither do they wear necklaces or makeup. Men and women are quite different in their development with women maturing much faster than men in matters of love. All the way through high school women are much more sensitive to love than men. When I observe my own children, I see that the girls appreciate things more deeply and also get embarrassed more easily. We can conclude that God made women this way so that they could grow in purity, and in their marriage become the focal point and illumination of love. That is the way of life God created for women.

**135.** What is a man's way of life? Men also respond to love. When a man gets mad his temper flares like fire, and love is almost unthinkable at that moment. Still, that is just one side of a man. A man is eventually melted by a woman, drawn by her toward the way of love. This is a very important universal law, that men were not made for men and women were not made for women. Men were not made for the sake of power and domination, but for women. When God undertook to create man He already had a blueprint for woman, and tried to adapt His creation of man accordingly. In the same way, when God created woman, He already had His blueprint of man in mind, and He created woman to match. It feels good to know that God had the love of our mates in mind when he created man and woman.

**136.** Why did God create man and woman to begin with? Their purpose was the consummation of love. The origin of all creation began with love. God's blueprint for men and women came from His thinking about the ideal form of love. This is a most astonishing fact. Love was the motivation for creation and out of that motivation men and women were conceived to perfectly give and receive love. God designed men and women to live a life of love, to be fruitful in love, and then to dwell in love for eternity. We come to the conclusion that we were born for love, and that our reason for living is to love and to grow toward the perfection of love. This is the purpose of life.

*Happy Unification Church Members 5-22-77*

**137.** In giving birth to their children, men and women are exercising their most precious power of creation. A woman's most supreme role is that of bearing children. Bearing children is not just an ordinary, random thing; the power and energy of the universe is focused in your own body to bring about the greatest event in your life. When you women conceive your children, you must realize that the universe is moving within your womb and making new life. In preparing for your children, you will think vertically high and horizontally wide linking the universe and your vision and dream for the future. Most of you have not had this experience but your time will come. Your age is the age of dreams.

**138.** Through universal energy men and women come toward each other, and in having a child their dream will become reality. When men and women are united in their ideal then through their children their love can become deeper and wider. The love of young people before marriage is directed horizontally toward each other, but when they have children, their love deepens to become vertical as well, uniting parent and child.

**139.** There is no such thing as a husband and wife who enjoy life while their children cry out, or children who are happy while their parents grieve.

**140.** Have you women ever been thankful that as you reach a certain age your body developed to enable you to bear children? This is the expression of the power of God. If you are really thankful to God for His gift of your body as His temple, then you will never be involved in a tragedy like divorce. For whom does your body change? Ultimately that change comes so that you can give birth to children. Your body structure changes in two areas mainly. Why do you have wider hips than men? God gave you a large foundation so that when you deliver a child you will not suffer too much. Also, you have large breasts so you can feed your child.

**141.** The vertical love between parents and children is closest to God's love. I want you to realize that you have this mission and purpose. That is why God gave you the beauty of certain features as breasts and hips. Ultimately, they are not even for your husband, and their misuse for carnal desire is utterly wrong. If you do not care about your own child, and about his future but only live for your carnal desires, then God would want you to cut your breasts off because you would not deserve to have them. After that you might have the right to ignore your baby. Divorced people who hear these remarks might feel uncomfortable, but I must tell the truth.

**142.** Unification Church members are very fortunate people because they know the truth. If you do not like your husband or wife, then you should not have children. Your goal is to have good children for the future and without that desire you have no right to get married or to live with your mate. If you use love only to take advantage of someone in satisfying your carnal desire, then you are actually a violator of universal law.

**143.** When you have a universal mind to embrace a universal purpose and to embrace God, as you become an older teenager and are sensitive to surrounding nature you become very sentimental and emotional in your reaction to the universe. Why are you built that way? It is a sign that you are maturing in love. God gave you a certain sensitivity which enables you to relate to the world with love.

**144.** For eternity a man can be proud of his wife, and for eternity a woman can be proud of her husband. Nothing else matters in the universe except your love; ultimately things like knowledge or money do not matter. When you have someone you can truly be proud of and love with all your energy then you are a very happy person.

**145.** Each of you is working toward that day when you will be proud of your husband and wife and want to shout out to the universe in your joy. With love you can conquer your husband and with your love you can conquer your wife. Love creates horizontal unity and vertical unity, and through this love you can even make God your prisoner. Through love you can conquer and occupy everything, and God will become helpless before your love.

**146.** A dog or a tree, anything in the universe which you touch with a loving heart will appreciate your love. When you look at nature you should realize that everything is a God-given gift which you can use to express your love toward your mate. God already knew that you would have the mind which would want to express your love in the form of a gift, so He provided the entire universe to you as a gift item. If you see a little kitten with soft fur, you think, "My wife would like this kitten."

**147.** When a married man meets another woman he will notice how she is similar or different from his wife. He may glance at her, not because he is attracted to the woman, but because He

loves his wife and is reminded of her. Women will notice a certain man in the same way. We relate the people we meet to the members of our family. When you look at an elderly woman you think, "Oh, she is like my grandmother;" and when you look at younger people you think of your own children or of your younger brothers and sisters. In that way you expand your immediate family to include all mankind. If there is a God who has an ideal then this must be it; this is the only way God could have His ideal of one family of man spread throughout the world.

**148.** A husband and wife together represent the entire universe. When a wife enters the place where her husband is, she enters not merely as a wife or as an individual, but as a representative of the universe. Of course, this kind of thinking has been nonexistent in your lives so far because the rest of the world never thinks in this way.

**149.** Men and women are proud of each other first and next they are proud of their children. What comes after that? Thirdly, they are proud of their parents. After having your own children you will all of a sudden realize the value of your own parents and be proud of them. It is not good enough to think you love your parents; not until you have your own children will you begin to truly understand and appreciate your parents.

**150.** After receiving love as children and experiencing the conjugal love of husband and wife you will ultimately come to the realization that the most wholesome, sacrificial and fundamental love is parental love. In an ideal life you would fully enjoy the experience of all these three loves.

**151.** Because the perfection of love is actualized as parental love, the center of a home should be the older people. If grandparents live there, then they should be the center because they are the parents of the parents. They are the host and hostess of the home and after they pass away, your parents would become the center of the home.

**152.** Why should the oldest people be the central people of the universe? Who is the oldest person in the universe? God is the oldest, and since He is the center of everything, we must follow that tradition.

*Let Us Thank God 5-29-77*

**153.** Parents enjoy seeing their baby doing the same things that they do.

**154.** There are also two kinds of parents. Some parents don't want to bother either their children or themselves by giving discipline. The other kind of parents are serious about their children becoming true men and women and would ask their children's teachers to give them strong guidance and strict high standards.

*Our Pride 6-5-77*

**155.** If you commit some kind of sin toward your own children, you must consider it the worst kind of crime. Instead of apologizing or repenting to God, you must mend your relationship with your children. That is much more important. If the children can forgive their parents then God can automatically forgive you.

**156.** When children commit some sin, the parents should take the position of their children and apologize or repent before God. Because of the parents God will then forgive the children.

**157.** Your family will be the basic building block of the Kingdom of God, and once you can restore this foundation you will always have a shield around you.

**158.** The desire of a woman is to have a husband who loves her with true love. A man's love is true when his love represents the love of God. So, a woman is actually looking for a man who represents God and gives her God's love.

**159.** A woman wants a husband who will respect her as being his wife for eternity and who will love her with an absolute and unchanging love.

**160.** When you and your husband have true love, you are helpless before that love and want to go anywhere your husband leads.

**161.** When your husband truly loves you as absolute, unique and eternal, the more you look at him the more he looks like God and acts like God. The time may even come when you say, "All I need is this one man because he is my God."



**162.** The parents' role is to educate the children and give them guidance. If the parents fight with each other, then they cannot teach their children by example. My own children sometimes fight but Mother and I should be able to say, "You children should stop fighting. Look at your own father and mother."

**163.** The first step for parents to become one with their children and for children to have unity among themselves is for the father and mother to become one with each other. Then children grow to realize that fighting cannot bring any goodness.

**164.** Sometimes I see my children fighting very severely and one of them either gets knocked down or his nose starts bleeding. Then they automatically come to Mother and me, crying, "Daddy, Mommy, look what happened to me. I'm sorry we fought. We'll never fight again."

**165.** It is a wise child who will say, "Father, my brother didn't behave too well. Will you give me permission to fight?" If they want to get permission from me then I say, "My son, my daughter, let me tell you about something better than fighting. Go and love them instead." I see in that child a greater capacity to love and the future of that particular child is much more solid.

**166.** The relationship between God and man is the same as this relationship between parents and children.

**167.** According to spiritual law, the worst kind of crime is that of parents who neglect their children and leave them or actually push them into the dungeons of hell. There is no forgiveness for such acts. There are certain things God can do, and if you repeat the same act there is still room for forgiveness; but there are things that even God cannot do, and if you commit that kind of crime then there is no forgiveness.

**168.** The mistreatment of children is the most unforgiveable thing in spirit world.

**169.** God's heart will be moved by parents who are willing and ready to die for their own children, saying, "You are like me. I have been living in that position." God has been a living sacrifice for the sake of His children.

**170.** You must be people who embrace your children even if they interrupt your most intimate moments.

**171.** God's criteria of beauty are heart and love, not how tall and masculine or how beautiful you are. That does not count.

**172.** Our greatest achievement and the greatest inheritance we can leave our children is the love of God and our perfected love as parents. That love is the greatest inheritance that children can ever receive.

**173.** We have to introduce God's love to our children. In their immaturity children do not automatically know God, so how will you teach them? You must demonstrate love of God yourself.

*The Desire of All Things 6-17-77*

**174.** It would be convenient to feed your babies if God had put women's breasts on top of their arms, but instead He wanted to have mothers nurse their sons and daughters close to their hearts. It represents giving their love. When you analyze things from this point of view, the whole universe becomes intoxicating.

**175.** The best way to inspire men is through love, and the same is true of women.

**176.** You blessed couples should not worry about your own surroundings and whether you have a nice home and furniture at this time. Worry instead about how to achieve the national level quickly. Together we will give our total energy toward this achievement and then go on to the worldwide and cosmic levels.

*The Desire of God 6-19-77*

**177.** Men and women long for the day they will become husbands and wives, and for the rest of their lives they will remember it as a most momentous day. If they form a happy marriage, it is a rare couple that forgets their anniversary. Every cell and fiber of your body concentrates on that one goal; the day of the fulfillment of love as husband and wife. That is a day you can really experience ecstatic joy, and every inch of your body wants to be uplifted by the joy of that day. Nothing is more precious than the fulfillment of that love.

**178.** Have you ever thought about how to concentrate your whole being to manifest love in a most dramatic way? When you put everything into crystallizing your love then your whole system works toward that one fulfillment. You can only be melted into the bosom of love when you find that day of becoming man and wife. Nothing else in the world can be more precious than that true manifestation of love. God has given marriage as the apex and fulfillment of your love.

*The Pinnacle of Suffering 6-26-77*

**179.** A husband and wife should be united heartistically and then they can unite in a common struggle becoming one body.

**180.** Young people have enthusiasm and hopeful vision, and would like to become as the sun beaming on all the world. They want to freely interact with the whole world.

**181.** Young people are poetically minded thinking in dramatic and romantic ways, and when they see the sun in the blue sky shining on a green world, their inspiration is stimulated. The singing of birds and the harmony of animals and nature all inspire the feeling that they are involved with the entire universe echoing its heartbeat.

**182.** If you really want to have an ideal husband, you must be able to carry burdens and suffering yourself. First become a person of high caliber yourself because otherwise you are not worthy to marry a man of high caliber.

**183.** I must be sympathetic with Mother because she has had ten children and her energy has been drained. Her body has been absolutely given to God. Sometimes people think Mother must be made of iron but that's not so. In the Korean custom the wife usually massages her husband, but he never massages his wife. That kind of thing is unheard of in Korea, but sometimes I must ignore that custom and massage Mother's legs because she is so tired, she just can't go on.

*The Ones Who Can Receive God's Love 10-1-77*

**184.** True patriotism does not begin on the level of the nation; you must find it first in the family. In other words, the pattern of loving at the family level is the model for all relationships of love in every level of society. The relationship between parents and children, husband and wife and brothers and sisters are the basic patterns of love. If you have a deep understanding of unity and a spiritual love at home, all you have to do is expand it to the level of society and nation and you have patriotism.

**185.** Education in the home can be such that the tradition of the father's position can be expanded onto the national level; for the purpose of the national goal and out of devotion to the national sovereignty, individuals would even be willing to give their lives as much as they would for their own parents.

*Host of the Future 10-23-77*

**186.** The important thing is that the parent's role is not just that of feeding milk to the baby. Parents have to give milk first, of course, but later also give discipline and guidance for molding their child's character. Parents have a vision and concept of what their child will be like in the future. If he is to be a world citizen, then he must be able to uphold certain standards for which his

parents must give all the necessary training. The good parent shapes his child's character to fulfill certain roles.

**187.** The parent must have a concept of how his child needs to be educated to eventually become a world leader who can uplift the world instead of being dominated by it. True parents will let you grow as a baby initially, but when your awakening is sufficient, they will teach you that this world has lost God's concept, that this is a deviated world and that, therefore, we must restore the original value and goal of life. Everyone needs parents to lead them out of the realm of death giving them the full realization and sufficient energy to break out of this muddy realm into a new world of life and resurrection. This is how God visualizes resurrection taking place in the fallen world.

*Our Newborn Selves 11-1-77*

**188.** I want women to be absolutely dignified and restored to honor so that they can walk in the sight of God without shame and in the sight of men without shame. Then nothing under the sun can deter or weaken such a woman and she can go straight forward to God. No kind of enticing can weaken that kind of woman. No temptation under the sun can change her direction. Even though her body is tired, if her eyes are shining and looking toward the one goal, nothing can tarnish her. That is a strong, invincible woman.

*Renewed Pride 12-4-77*

**189.** In order for there to be perfect harmony there should be three levels of unity: God, parents in the Adam and Eve position, and children, and if any of those levels are lacking there is disharmony within the universe. Clearly each couple needs children as the horizontal expansion of their family. Once you form this foundation then automatically a vertical line can be drawn. The body expands on the horizontal level and your children are a horizontal extension of your body, but your mind is vertically centered so the spirit world is your vertical extension. In this way both the physical world and spiritual world join together in you and through you God can maneuver the entire cosmos, which is the spirit world and physical world together.

*Basic Formula for the Realization of the Kingdom of God on Earth 1-1-78*

**190.** What does it actually mean that God pulled a rib out of man? It means that God molded woman by His own hand, using man as the example making her slightly different so they would complement each other. For example, because God gave man a beard, He made woman with smooth skin. Even their voices are different with men's voices capable of loud volume while

women's are lighter and sort of fragile. If a choir could only sing in one unison tone, it could not make good music, but men's and women's voices together create the harmony and beauty of music. Since Adam was masculine and strong, God made Eve as beautiful as the flowers and very feminine. Imagine if God had made both men and women muscular, heavy, and broad-shouldered. God knew the needs of each and made them to complement each other.

*God's Day 1-1-78*

**191.** Each one of you has three different levels of parents. First is God, who created you and destined you to be. Second are your natural parents because they were the actual instruments to deliver you to this world, and third is nature because creation loaned you the flesh and bone you have now.

*All Things Depend on Us 1-8-78*

**192.** Again, three generations are needed to perfect love. God and Adam and Eve alone cannot be perfected, but God and Adam and Eve with their children will make one big circle. God constructed man's span of life in such a way that he could enjoy his children and grandchildren during his earthly life, and the person who can see his grandchildren has seen his morning of glory.

**193.** While you are living here on earth you can experience being in the children's position to God and then His position as parent, and ultimately God's position before you die. God and Adam form the vertical line and the horizontal line will be children. Man should experience all three levels before ending his physical life on earth. Consummating the three levels of love will be your asset in heaven.

**194.** Each of you must feel the pain of those lonely senior citizens, the pain of a devoted father and mother missing their children. Without really experiencing that pain you will have no way to comfort them. The only person who really knows this loneliness and painful agony is God and He is the real teacher.

*New Morning of Glory 1-22-78*

**195.** The personal qualities of a husband and wife may seem to be imbalanced, but together they create a harmonized beauty which is far better than their independent beauty. This is why man's attention tends toward harmony rather than independence. A husband and wife may not be so

beautiful individually, but if together they create a happy family, then they will attract people's attention. Even ugliness creates beauty when it is harmonized.

**196.** Many couples have been blessed but some of them decided that they needed a nice home and that for them the dispensation would be secondary. Sometimes I send them far apart from each other to separate missions but even though they go they may grumble; that complaint is what God sees, not the external obedience.

**197.** Suppose the world one day accepts me and sees the possibility of making the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. If at that time God sends couples off separately to the deserts of Africa, but they feel that they should finally be able to enjoy being married and they say, "How could You ask me to do that?" then they are utter failures.

**198.** You married couples should commit yourselves together, holding each other's hands, to the task of recreation through paying indemnity. Sometimes I think about taking one blessed couple as an example and giving them an extraordinary task in order to show the world how they can fulfill.

*The Course of Life and Restoration by Indemnification 2-26-78*

**199.** Parents will always be concerned for their children's wellbeing and want them to be better than they themselves are.

**200.** If the worst criminal takes his children to the movies and they watch a scene of a robbery exactly like what the father has been doing all his life, would he tell his children they must be just like that? Wouldn't he say, "That is an evil man, my son. He shouldn't be like that, and you mustn't pay attention to him." Even if he is a robber, a father will forget himself as far as his children are concerned and want his children to be good somehow. That's the natural expression of human conscience and parental heart.

**201.** The parent is the ultimate teacher of the child, the final authority to control and discipline him and give him a purpose in life. Parents might purposely let their child suffer in his younger days for the sake of his future, but every such deed is done for the sake of the child, not for themselves. When parents are firm, it is automatically an action of service to the society and nation.

**202.** Children's basic attitudes are always inclined toward playing and being rebellious; they are born with a free spirit and their parents must always be alert to train them, even sometimes spanking and pushing them to study. Parents might sternly say, "This is not for our own sake. You must become a person who can make a contribution to society and the nation." Even if parents must use force to discipline their children, the children will realize later it was the best thing for them.

**203.** No society or government can be responsible for the education of children; God gave the role of educating children to their parents. Your relationship with your parents is the determining factor in your relationships with all levels of society. Whoever is disobedient to his parents is normally disrespectful to his teachers and is a troublemaker in society. When a child is rebellious to his own parents, he is rebellious toward his own nation. The parents' role is the key.

*Sorrow and Tears 3-1-78*

**204.** Love is a tremendous responsibility. Receiving love means not only inheriting love but responsibility as well. After a loved one dies, you are in a position to fulfill his responsibility. Suppose a husband really loves his wife; if he dies then his responsibility is laid upon his wife's shoulders in addition to her own. When a wife who loved her husband dies, he will inherit her entire responsibility. When husband and wife are separated by death, the survivors should normally live singly and take up the responsibility of the dead person. He cannot desire to have another love until his additional responsibility is fulfilled. When the husband, for instance, has fulfilled his responsibility entirely, the wife might consent to her husband having another wife on earth. With that consent alone can the bereaved husband marry again. That is the law of love in the spirit world.

**205.** Since you love your parents and they love you, when they die you take over their responsibility and mission.

**206.** When your parents die they leave some will or desire behind, and you as their child should fulfill it. When one half of a couple dies, the surviving partner should fulfill their desire. That is the law of love. If you obey the law of love on earth then in heaven you can go anywhere, even into the bosom of God. There will be no boundary in all the universe.

**207.** Parents always think of their children no matter how extreme their state of mind might be. For example, when the parents are really rejoicing over some happening, they wish that their sons and daughters could be there to enjoy the thing together with them. When they are facing utmost tragedy and their children want to try to save them, the parents say, "Get out of here; we're all right. We don't want you to be endangered by it." In each situation they are still thinking about their children.

**208.** Many newborn babies are nursed at their mother's breasts sometimes even longer than a year. Nature was made in such a way that babies were supposed to grow with breast feeding. Why does a baby search after his mother's milk? The milk not only sustains life, but love is also conveyed in the act of feeding.

**209.** Feeding a child cow's milk is similar to feeding him the apples you found in the river from a boat that lost its cargo. There is no real relationship and life relationship between parents and

children in that case. Such parents are only worried about getting their baby something to eat so he won't die. That's all there is to it.

**210.** What is the most precious thing linking parents and children? Food? Love? Suppose a mother is a very ugly woman, while her son and daughter are very attractive. Could love still connect them? If a child loves his parents, then even if they look very ugly, maybe even crippled and disabled, that child still is excited to invite them to school proudly taking them to the principal's office to be introduced and then taking them around to meet all the teachers. But if there is no love then a child is embarrassed to have them visit his school.

**211.** True love doesn't care about external appearances; it doesn't make any difference how ugly or small your parents might be. If there is a warmth and flow of love between a child and his parents, he is proud of them because of that love.

**212.** If parents have no real overflowing sense of love, they are governed by external things instead and a child doesn't want to show off his mother and father. Which way of life is the true expression of love? Which kind of man or woman are you?

**213.** The marriage of the parents is always the son's or daughter's responsibility as well; it is a joint responsibility between children and parents, not just between parents. No matter what, you as their children have a debt of love to them.

**214.** Unless a wife can sacrifice herself for her husband's purpose for the sake of love, she cannot qualify to be loved by him. Life can be sacrificed for love, and the true husband will determine himself to sacrifice for his wife.

**215.** When you women get married, do you want to love your husband so much that you can sacrifice even your life for him, or do you want a husband so that you can have a servant? Are you men looking forward to having a wife for whom you are willing to sacrifice your life or someone who can cook breakfast? In many cases men and women have a thief's mind, being very arrogant and greedy to be served.

**216.** Should you love your natural parents? You should love your parents as much as you love God because the father and mother are the center of the family. If there is love in the home then they are really the central point and there will be oneness, but if there is no love then that family will be merely a biological unit. Without love the members of a family will become enemies.

**217.** Grandparents may be so old that they cannot even take care of themselves, but still you should love them more than you love your own children. Why did God organize human life in such a way that older people go through a second childhood? It was to make each generation realize or practice how it should love the older generations. Through loving them in this period



you can know how they loved you when you were a child. Now that you are grown-up you treat them like children, which will dramatize your service to them.

**218.** There are two kinds of children you are taking care of then—your own children and your grandparents—and you must feel the same toward them both. Furthermore, you feel naturally dedicated to taking care of them. In that case you will have unlimited love toward your grandparents, and then you will deserve to inherit whatever they have without exception. You must go beyond that level becoming sons and daughters of piety even to that extreme level.

**219.** Having your seniors go through second childhood is God's plan for giving you an express ticket all the way to heaven by serving your parents and grandparents. You will have a first-class seat to heaven on the train of love. When I investigated this law of love I discovered this point. God is a God of wisdom, so He allows old folks to go through a second childhood, not so they would be ridiculed by their children, but in order to give your children an express ticket to heaven.

**220.** God will give heavenly children to the home that respects this law and raise up great leaders. This is logical because that particular home is fulfilling the supreme law of the universe. God wants to bring future leaders for the nation and world out of such a home.

**221.** It is really a beautiful thing for children and grandchildren to take care of grandparents who are like little children themselves, to bring them treats and make them laugh by sharing jokes. Is there any harsh exchange of words in that case? Is the second childhood a blessing or a curse? Any young couple naturally changes their baby's diapers and bathes it. The mother in particular likes to take care of the baby and doesn't feel any suffering for it. It is an enjoyable chore because it is a loving action. In the same way you should extend that heart to the grandparents, who are like children, only older. If you do that then you are really men and women of God. Nothing is filthy or dirty in love.

**222.** When you cover both extremes, loving your children on the one hand and your old dying parents on the other, you can receive a graduation certificate from the school of love. The most important lesson is learned from the opportunity there in your own home. You don't have to search the world for someone to serve. Wherever you go, you want to return to your home. God made you to feel that way and everything you need is already there.

**223.** When you love God as much as you love your children and your parents, you will pass the test. On the other hand, when you love mankind as much as you love your own children and parents and God, you are really a Ph.D. in the school of love. Why are parents so precious then? By loving them you receive a genuine inheritance from the universe. Your parents are the channel to give you blessing.

**224.** In the last months of pregnancy, a mother has to go to the bathroom often because the baby is taking up all the room inside.

*My Life 3-12-78*

**225.** When you marry, the possibility of death is always nearby. You have to always be alert and keep your mind and body straight so that even after you go to the eternal spirit world you and your husband can continue living with God for eternity, receiving His love together. All of you women would certainly like to have that kind of eternal relationship with your husbands, wouldn't you? American women now find themselves in a rather confused and miserable state looking for that kind of love.

**226.** When a woman is about to marry, she is at a crossroads; if she goes along one road she can destroy her husband, but if she takes the other path, she can help him prosper, and not only him but his family and the society and nation which are also hers. You stand at a very important dividing point when you get married, and you have to set your purpose straight. By going the right way, you are going straight toward God with a family and eventually a society and nation. This is why you are marrying to begin with. You have to clearly understand these things when you are on the verge of marrying someone.

*Where God Resides and His Course 3-19-78*

**227.** What is the purpose of marriage? Is it for men and women to live together? The purpose of marriage is the perfection of their mind and heart, the perfection of their love. Through marriage they can achieve that goal. When you declare to the world that you are married, you are actually declaring the initiation of your venture to perfect your mind and heart and love. When you die, you are supposed to have accomplished all that in your married life and be qualified to go to heaven.

**228.** A father and mother should be regarded by their children as representatives of God because through their parents, children should see unchanging unity of mind, heart, and love. Children should live in that atmosphere from morning till night, day after day, year after year. This unchanging quality is symbolized by parents; that's why children think their parents are like God. In the ideal family, therefore, children always think, "I want to be like my daddy; I want to be like my mommy. I want to unite with my parents." If that kind of spirit surrounds the family, it denotes the perfection of the home.

**229.** When men and women are growing up their most serious goal is to find their subject and object of love. They are pushing themselves together in that unity of heart, mind, and love. Their

ultimate goal, the goal of marriage, is to find the ideal object and unite in love and heart. That love, however, must represent or correspond to the love of God. When we talk about love, we are automatically talking about the love of God. Parents represent the total love of God and through them children see the total representatives of the love of God.

**230.** When I visited Barrytown I asked the seminarians if they would use birth control after they got married. If Jacob and his wife had not wanted too many babies then Joseph, one of the youngest, would never have been born, and if he had not been born there would have been no chance for the Exodus of the Israelites from Egypt. I have many older brothers and sisters. If my parents had used birth control and only wanted one or two children, would there have been any chance for me to be born? That would have been great for you because then no one would push you out! In my own family, the farther you look down the line of children, the brighter and more capable the children are. How do you know what kind of son or daughter you may have in the future? God may want to give a special kind of son or daughter to my family a few years from now who may have the power to govern the world or who may discover some invention to speed the work of God. Who knows! But if Mother and I stop having children then when I go to spirit world God will accuse me of messing up His dispensation. Now you know whether or not birth control is best, right?

**231.** In His dispensation God may want to work through you to have a child of important ability. How do you know? No matter how much suffering or inconvenience it means, it is best to think, "God, if You desire to use my body to bear a child who will change the world, then no matter how difficult it may be or how ugly a mate You may give me, I want to do that."

**232.** Suppose your family has a tradition of having beautiful white girls. If God wants to give you a black husband and through the two of you, He wants to send a child who will be a special leader, you must give up your family's tradition of white beauty. Will you be happier to integrate with the black race? Perhaps it will not be until the third generation that God will send such a child. Can you be patient with God's will? Then God will be in trouble because He will have to respond to your most intense desire and find a way to fulfill it. Do you think He will accuse you of being greedy and only give you weak children, or will He commend your desire and work in faith through your generations.

**233.** You must have children who are better than yourselves. If they are inferior to you then that will be another reason for you to repent when you get to spirit world. You will have to apologize to God. You must think that you should give better than you were given. "My parents loved me this much, so I am going to love my own children this much more and educate them this much more." Then your children will feel they want to give more to their own children and then their world will boom and prosper.

**234.** Until Ye Jin and Hyo Jin were twelve, no matter how late I came in at night I would always go to their bedrooms and pray for them. I feel rather sorry for the younger children now because

they don't get that kind of attention. It is not easy to be a true father. But my children feel that their parents are number one in the world and your children should feel the same about you.

**235.** Why do you marry? This is an important thing for you to understand. Marry for the sake of God and humanity, not for yourself.

**236.** A man and woman trying to join their minds and love together for eternity is what we call marriage. A marriage is the unity of two minds and two loves. Do you have confidence you can permanently unite your heart and love with your mate's?

**237.** Why do you think parents let their children suffer? No parents want to see their children suffer. They permit it only because they know that suffering will bring more benefit to their children and that through it, they can inherit all the blessing that their parents have. That blessing cannot be bought. You have to become one with it by total obedience.

*Resurrected Kingdom of God 3-26-78*

**238.** A man must be capable of marrying with the idea that he exists for his wife, no matter how difficult the circumstances become. This is the only way that he will be able to make his marriage successful and thus be able to enter heaven. How can you as an individual truly love another person in the original way unless you can totally give up yourself for him? And without doing this, how can you love God and mankind? Ideals will just be wishful thinking until you can do this. Doesn't that stand to reason? I have always challenged myself in this way: can I love that person on behalf of God and mankind?

*I Proclaim That I Know 4-1-78*

**239.** In God's eyes the real husband and wife are so brainwashed about each other that they don't see anything else. They are so blindly united that the husband only sees his wife and the wife only sees her husband. That's God's standard and that's the way Adam and Eve were in the garden of Eden.

**240.** Husband and wife are like two giant magnets pulling each other. If the wife is standing far away, then automatically without even knowing, her husband is pulled to her. You don't even need the formality of saying, "Hi, my darling." Which is more dramatic, to spend all kinds of energy and time in formalities or to be totally intoxicated as you are pulled together? You want to have the intoxication of love, don't you? If this is the true nature of man, do you think it's common sense that the fall of man came one day when Eve picked up an apple? That's not a very believable story.

**241.** Then what is the roadway or path of true love? Here we have people gathered together from five races. We are united together in love, but what is the origin of that love? The origin of that love is found between men and women. These two are the originators of love. True love, therefore, will grow from the relationship between true men and true women. The true husband and wife are the originators of true love, and when they give birth to children and create a family, they are manifesting true love. The most important linkage of love is between parents and children, but the origin of that love lies between the husband and wife.

**242.** What is the right formula of true love between husband and wife, between parents and children? The brightest light bulbs are useless unless there is a powerhouse to generate electricity for them. The father and mother and children may be ready to shine beautifully, but unless there is a power source giving energy to those electric bulbs, none of them will light up. Once the power plant supplies energy, they all generate light and warmth. In that environment everything will be melted in the atmosphere of love. That is the spiritual home. A home is like a brightly shining electric bulb which is powered by God's power plant. A fallen family is like a bulb with no connection to the powerhouse. Today the Unification Church is trying to repair that shorted circuit.

**243.** Ideal love is not related to how handsome or beautiful you are. That is totally unimportant. A wife is always in the role of woman, mother to all mankind, and she represents heaven and earth. Also, a wife is in the role of sister. As a husband and wife, a man and woman are really a microcosm of the entire universe. You men should love your wives and mothers and sisters as you love God.

**244.** Why did God implant such a desire in man wanting such passion and zeal to flower during the teenage years? If we analyze the psychology of young people and ask why they want to become great football champions, great singers, or great poets, we find that the ulterior motive is a search after love. A young person wants to find someone of supreme love in order to become a recipient or giver of that love himself. The football champion is living football; football is his life. Yet when football can't bring love, it becomes worthless, and he gives it up for love. There are many students who work hard to become Ph.D.'s, doing research and academic work, but when they can find love, all those accomplishments become secondary to that love.

**245.** God wanted to see young adults burning with passion and zeal and infinite energy to reach true love. The one who finds the way or reaches out for that true love will fulfill his life. Love is supreme and God made man with that nature so he could readily reach that supreme love. By knowing this principle, we can readily understand at what age the fall of man took place. It was at the age of adolescence. We can readily understand that it was the same search and burning zeal which made the fall possible.

**246.** The original purpose of dancing was good because in dancing you can share the joys of the love of God and the love of man and woman as husband and wife. The principle of our church is to dance as husband and wife, but not until then.

**247.** When you are blessed and become a loving husband and wife centered upon God, you can dance in your home 24 hours a day. Go ahead. If you are really God-centered and want to be more dramatic in showing your love, I'll let you dance in the subway or even in an airplane.

**248.** A husband and wife can go right ahead and dance in public provided they genuinely show an outburst of love toward each other and are not doing things hypocritically. Then all the onlookers around you will applaud to behold such a beautiful sight. People will feel, "I wish I could have a wife like that, a husband like that. I look forward to someday having a life like this couple is enjoying." As long as you are doing it as husband and wife, I don't mind if you are streaking or even doing topless dancing. If it's truly an outburst of the love of God between husband and wife, there's not formality involved, and you don't have to bow to each other. But until then, I am absolutely strict. Until you get blessed, men and women cannot even hold hands.

**249.** The most precious of all love is parental love having God as Father and coming into the position to receive God's love as His son and daughter. Man is the bridge of love and must become the recipient of the love of God in the parent-child relationship serving God as his Father and receiving His love as son and daughter.

**250.** The true pillar of the universe is husband and wife. The relationship of the husband and wife combine together all the relationships of the universe. Once you come to that level nothing can pull you to Satan or to hell because all attachment to Satan is already gone. Heaven starts here on earth when a husband and wife live together like this. Wherever they live is the Kingdom of Heaven on earth.

**251.** It is an ironic thing in this world that when a son and daughter are ready to marry they go to a priest or pastor, to someone outside the family. No parent in this world officiates at his child's marriage ceremony. The parents should be not only in the position of father and mother, but also in the position of king or master in the home. Children must grow up looking at their parents as their models, thinking, "I will be like my father. I will be like my mother." That is the best tradition. It is the most natural thing that parents be the judge.

*Parent's Day 4-8-78*

**252.** If you are blessed and then fail, your ancestry will be broken down affecting seven generations. In spirit world it will not be Satan but your good ancestors who will accuse you. There is no way to escape this. If you fail in your mission of marriage, leaving to marry someone outside of our church, then what will happen in spirit world? Your children will be treated worse than the most rejected orphans on earth.

**253.** The fall occurred at the top of the growth stage, but if you fail after the blessing it is after the perfection stage. For this there is no excuse; it is worse than Adam and Eve's fall. Even Satan will say, "You fell from the perfection stage while I only fell from the growth stage." Most criminals can be defended in court, but there is no way to protect this kind of criminal because this crime occurs in the perfection stage. This is a most formidable contract we have. All blessings are a contract between each couple.

*The 25th Year of the Unification Church 5-1-78*

**254.** We will never decline as long as we are successful in raising our sons and daughters to be faithful for the cause of God.

**255.** When a husband and wife are absolutely faithful to each other, they can both come forward to God Himself. The stricter their relationship is in fidelity, the closer they will be to God, even sitting right beside Him.

*Heavy Burden 5-7-78*

**256.** If I match a greedy man with a greedy woman then they will talk about robbing other people. What else can they do? How should I match a greedy man? I will give him a wife who is completely selfless, who does not want anything. He will talk to her about getting this and that but she will be indifferent and not respond. Even if he gets frustrated and says, "What kind of woman are you?" she will never pay any attention. Then her husband must think, "Now that I am married to her I must love her." If he will not separate from her then after a long time he will know that he is the one in the wrong because of his greed and he will try to change. She will lead him to the right side. Under these circumstances we need to change each other.

**257.** It is a miracle if a man and woman like each other. It never just happens. There is always a struggle for betterment and self-realization. Step by step they get nearer to God. If you don't like this way and only want to satisfy yourselves now, then your children will not prosper. You must understand how your husband should feel if you lack something. A man must understand how his wife is. Once you become one in vertical love, electricity will jump between you like lightning. There is always a spark between positive and negative, and when that happens a man and woman will become one and everything around them will become one. Then heaven and earth will be altogether one.

**258.** If I walk in without notice and you have only cooked for two people you cannot say, "I'm sorry. We don't have enough for you." Even though the grown children have to go without food, the parents must be given the first portion. In the present way of life, the parents must call ahead

and give notice to their children about visiting them. They shouldn't have to call first. You should accept it that Mother and I need not to call to come visit you, nor your own parents. We must have that attitude as a standard. You will do the same with your own sons and daughters.

**259.** We are going to establish a new tradition for the family. Have you ever thought about what you would do if after you are married and living in one room, I come to stay overnight? If I visit you then will you have me sleep in the middle of the room, with the husband on one side of the room and the wife on the other? Is that the right way to think or not? Should I call ahead of time for permission to come? Even though this has not been common practice in the world, you should start doing this for your own parents. They can visit you any time they feel like it. Also, you must teach your own sons and daughters this way. Parents don't need any prior permission to visit their children.

**260.** Once you are united in love, separation is impossible.

**261.** The one thing we have to do before getting married is to live for other people, never for ourselves. Because of the fall, people habitually live for themselves, but we will stop living like that. For whom do you get married? For yourself? No, first you get married for God, then for mankind and then for children.

**262.** These are the very points I am concerned with when I am matching couples. If I see that two people will love God together and serve mankind when they marry then they are a good match. I also see whether their children will live the same way in the future. I feel sorry for you because I am not concerned whether individuals will be happy being married to each other.

*The Burden on Our Shoulders 6-11-78*

**263.** Many mothers confess that when they are in labor it is so painful that they wish the baby was very small like a fist so that birth would hurt less. But then once the baby is delivered, the mother's concern turns instantly to her child, and she checks everything to see that all is normal. She examines the eyes, ears, nose, hands, and feet and opens the mouth to make sure the baby has a tongue. It is a great relief when the baby has its first bowel movement and urine flows out right. This might sound funny, but the mother is quite serious about making sure the baby is functioning normally. Can you feel that, or do you think the mother is worrying too much? The mother has great anxiety until the baby takes its first milk; then for the first time she knows that she has a perfectly normal baby, and she is relieved.

**264.** You should know that someone was happy to find your eyes the way they are and every part of your body the way it is. Your own mother was the first one who really rejoiced at the way



you function. What about your father? Your mother was so happy after making sure that everything was in the proper order that to see her relief your father was also happy.

**265.** When nursing her baby, does any mother think that it would be better if part of her baby's face were different? Even though the baby may be clearly out of proportion, she never thinks that way because she is happy that her baby is healthy. Does the father feel happy too? Does any father bring his child up thinking that she will have to have plastic surgery when she grows up because she is not very pretty? On the contrary, even though the father does not think she is beautiful he still believes that as she grows up everything will come into proportion. Don't you think the father and mother will feel like that?

*Let Us Be Grateful 6-18-78*

**266.** Fighting to a moderate degree is normal when you are growing up because it stimulates you. A cub or kittens play around and sometimes get into a serious fight, but after a certain time they stop and go back to their mother. That's normal for growing up.

**267.** The ideal match will unite a person with a high nose and narrow face with a person who has a broad face and an almost flat nose. To God it would be the most ideal match and He would keep following that couple to see how they live together.

**268.** The first thing that Oriental children are taught is how to sit and behave when they come before their parents or anyone of superior position. They will sit in such a way as to shrink as much as possible. Big people really have a hard time with this, but it is courtesy for them at least to shrink mentally. This courtesy is a very important thing in the Orient. In the West you greet each other with handshakes, which are horizontal actions. Westerners tend to express courtesy in a horizontal way.

**269.** When you return to your original position, women should never try to be bigger than men; this is one thing they must strive to keep in mind. Women are bigger in only two aspects—in their bosom and hips—and that is for the sake of their children, not themselves. They should never be proud of having a bigger bosom and hips than men. I have to emphasize this for Western women because they have an uncontrollable tendency to try to act bigger than men.

**270.** Does love originate from man or woman? The fall originated in a woman's trying to take the initiative in love. You should keep in mind that the subject should initiate love. Should the woman follow the man or the other way around? Who follows whom in the fallen world now? You men should have the unswerving confidence that you would never marry if no woman followed you.

**271.** In the West you say, "She got married;" but in the East they say, "She went to her husband's house." Does a husband go to live in his wife's house with her family? That is the exception to the rule. In this view a woman is like an extension of her husband. You probably think this seems to devalue women, don't you? This is the way God made things and you must accept that women are the weaker sex. Even though I speak strongly like this to Westerners, both men and women want to follow me and are thankful. You don't mind when I speak like this about women?

**272.** When you say your father is the center of your home, you are saying that he is responsible for all the activities and affairs of the family. With some exceptions in the West, who is primarily the center of the family, the man or woman? Does the father or mother go out to defend the home from invasion? In addition to that, the management and education of the children are the responsibility of the father; he must take care of 360 degrees.

**273.** God's love comes first to the man and then to the woman. If the man has the left hand of God then the woman has to go around and have His right; the man holds God's left with his right hand and the woman holds God's right hand with her left. That's the only possible circle. Once it is complete there is no difference between them because they are all one. That's the way the whole universe operates, starting on God's left and then coming around full circle to His right.

**274.** Before becoming one there is a distinct subject and object, but once there is perfect unity there is no subject or object; they are one. This even includes God, who is subject of all. God and man and woman are one and are no longer separate. No one can deviate from this formula or tradition. Even though you drift away and live as you like, you must come back eventually. It is always men who inherit the works of the household and not the women.

**275.** When the parents hold hands with God, with whom would the children hold hands? With the world. Daughters go to another house when they marry. They do not return but stay there, forming a larger circle. The son stays in his house and takes responsibility there. In this way a household gets bigger and bigger.

**276.** The daughters-in-law come from outside of your home while the sons-in-law live outside of it. But even though one stays outside and another comes into your home to live, they are all part of one big family circle and contribute love just as your own sons and daughters do. That is the ideal of family love, all connected to the same love as the parents. The sons and their wives, daughters and their husbands are connected on either side and the whole becomes one harmonious family, the ideal.

**277.** Even though a household would like to keep its most valuable things to itself, half of its most valuable components come from the outside. Parents can't call their in-laws strangers and never mingle. Instead, with time, those in-laws come to be as much a part of the family as the original children. In this way everyone is to be connected. If someone objects and feels this is not right, it means that he can never let his son or daughter marry.

**278.** Why should one have to receive a total stranger from outside his family, loving him as much as one's own family? Love is the very force that causes this, and all harmonious connections are made through love. Through the same love everyone has a common objective and purpose. When parents receive a newcomer to marry their child, they must remember that this person also has his own home and parents. A daughter-in-law must always be aware that her husband is supposed to receive the love of his family and she must follow the same path as her husband. Since his parents love her husband, she must love them in the same way as well as the rest of his family. She must love everyone who loves her husband; then she becomes the ideal daughter-in-law. In return they must love her to the same degree that they love him, and in this way, the ideal family is formed.

**279.** Any wife who objects to having all these relationships is in the wrong because she is preventing love from making a complete circle. By denying that love she is cutting the circuit and then because of her, others must do without love. It has tremendous adverse effects on others and for that reason she is a bad woman. Tremendous resentment will be directed toward her, and her in-laws will try to change her mind so she can be a conduit of love. It may be good to resent her in that case because she is the one who upset the whole balance of the universal tradition, and because of their resentment she may correct herself. In that sense their hostility may be a good thing. Since she is blocking the flow of love, she must receive the blame and pay indemnity to mend the whole thing.

**280.** The daughter-in-law who really wants to live with her in-laws will be right at the center, but the one who dislikes it will live off to one side and her world will be very small. Who should you love the most—parents or grandparents? You should love the grandparents even more than your own husband and his parents. The grandfather is himself plus his offspring, so he is actually bigger than his son and grandson. The grandparents should feel that the more sons and daughters they have, the better. The more they welcome everyone, the more enriched in love they will be. If they limit themselves and don't like their children's husbands and wives, then they cannot be a harmonious part of their family's life and must stay away. This would be the most painful thing of all.

**281.** Since every family will have half of its members coming from outside, loving these "outsiders" means you will widen your love to include the world. Since the new person in your family is loved by his parents and also by your own child, you too must love to complete the circle. You will rejoice with this new family as well as with your own, loving your new sons and daughters as much as the children you have been loving for many years. This is the ideal family and that is exactly how God is.

**282.** If you can embrace and love many generations in your husband's whole family then the circle of love becomes worldwide, embracing even spirit world, and your love becomes more meaningful. In this way the whole universe becomes filled with love.

**283.** You don't have to wait until you become an in-law yourself. You know what it is going to be like, so when you meet an old man or woman you can love him or her as much as the grandparents they remind you of. Since we all have a common ancestor, this relationship will eventually connect the entire world. If you meet some middle-aged people who are around the same age as your parents, then you think, "Since I felt this way towards my parents, I would feel the same toward these people." Or if they are the age of your elder brothers and sisters then you can love them as much. If you feel the intensity of love toward others as you do in your own family, you are an ideal man or woman. Having such men and women as His children is the maximum that God could expect.

The Path of the Chosen 7-9-78

**284.** All the children have to do is follow. When the parents go through a path of thorns the children can't say, "Father, I don't want to go because it's too painful." Then the parents will scold them, "Don't come with me then. You are nuisances." The children will cry but still they will follow. Then even though the parents keep scolding, sometimes they will say, "Come sit beside us." You might think that is a contradiction, but it is only the normal relationship of the parents and children. Parents seem to always be scolding but their heart and love are so strong that when they embrace their children there is no trace of resentment.

**285.** What about the Western pattern of relationship between husband and wife? In the public way we always have to follow, but whenever the Western man says something in public, his wife always replies, "What about me? What do you want me to do by myself?" Throughout history they have always been thinking about themselves. No chaste woman ever sent her husband out, saying, "You are going to work for the public so don't worry about me. Go and do well for both of us." How about your future wives in the Unification Church? When you get blessed will you hold your husbands to yourselves or would you say, "Forget about me and go do your work. Go and fight for me also." Are you that good?

**286.** Is it wrong to be separated? There is no question that it is better to live together, but for the public cause it is better to be separated. By being separate your future is much better than if you always live together; it will bring more result. If the parents live that way then their children will be respected and treated better by all people than if the parents had lived together. It is better to follow that way because it is the true way.

**287.** As children who must you follow? If the parents are striving to go to the top of the mountain and it's a very difficult hike, would true children all say, "Father, that's too difficult for me. I want to stay down below?" Or would they follow him even if they cried with tiredness? What if I suddenly said we must now cross the ocean? Would the children say, "No, we'd better stay here?" What if you lost your life crossing the ocean? If someone had to die first, should it be the parents or the children? Should the parents work harder or the children? Are you sincere when you say the children should work harder? That's the way it should be. The parents would always be concerned

about the future of their children and their descendants. They would never have a comfortable night's sleep as long as their children were working hard. True parents will think about the future of their hardworking children, even throughout the night.

**288.** Among us blood is connected, and life is connected, and love is connected. We must be proud of the fact that we are now born again in the blood lineage and love that ties us to heaven. As long as we live, we can never let go of this. As long as I have life, I cannot drain my blood or my love out of myself. As long as I have that blood flowing in myself, I cannot give up my life or give up my love. This is the depth of our connection; we must always be strongly aware that we are the newborn children of God.

**289.** Unification marriage is not just ordinary marriage. It represents indemnity of all extremes in worldly marriages. Not everyone married in the Unification Church is great; in fact, they are not any better than any others in the world. But in one thing they excel over all worldly married people, and that is that they hold onto the will of God and have determined that alive or dead they will go this way throughout their lives. Nothing else is different.

**290.** Some members exclaim over a blessed child or a blessed couple but actually that has no meaning. It's better to exclaim over his or her willingness to do the will of God. As long as there is that devotion, we must respect that marriage and the children coming from it.

**291.** If you deny yourself and go a way that is counter to your desires, it is good for you. Wait and see whether or not you have good children.

*History and Our Responsibility 7-16-78*

**292.** When you are blessed, you will experience how a husband will embrace his wife so hard that if he is a strong man, he might even break a couple of her ribs and then she will have to go to the hospital! Will she say her husband is a bad man? No, she will have no regrets even if her bones are broken.

*One Age, One Generation 9-3-78*

**293.** On the way to heaven, you must not create cliques of white or black or yellow, but you must go beyond color. This is very important on the way to heaven. I am very grateful to the American family for one thing. When I was in Korea many American members were petitioning me to give them Korean brides. What about American women then, where will they go? As American men are going toward Korean brides, American women should want to go toward black husbands. That means America will encompass the world in all directions. How could there be

fighting if America embraces the yellow and black races? That's the way God thinks. You might say, "We accept that completely, but let's tur around and have the women take Korean husbands and the men take black brides. "No, the women have to undertake the more difficult task because the women initiated the fall. God wants them to take the greater responsibility in restoration. That is a statement of principle, not just my point of view.

*The Completion Period for the Dispensation 11-12-78*

**294.** When women arrive in their teens, perhaps fourteen years of age their bodies change. Their bosom and hips develop, and they notice how they are changing. Then their eyes and ears and nose and mouth start trying to function vertically. You are looking for something fantastic at that age and you are walking on something other than solid ground. You laugh and smile and talk to the trees and clouds and then cry out for no apparent reason. Even little things like one simple leaf falling to the ground sparks your laughter.

**295.** When a loving husband and wife are embracing each other they feel that two people are embracing, but in the end, they feel as one person. They don't feel a boundary between the two of them. When you reach this point, true existence for both of you starts right there.

**296.** A first-class wife can make the worst man feel like a king. She can make a poorly qualified husband into the most shining material. This applies not only to the women; a first-class husband can make an insignificant woman feel like a queen.

*Mainstream of the Dispensation of God 11-19-78*

**297.** You can divide mankind into four different categories: parents, children, husband, and wife. That's all. Even that can be reduced into two halves: man and woman. That's why everyone needs marriage. Everyone needs to have some object whom he can truly love and serve 100 percent. By setting that condition you can come before God and say you have loved mankind and the universe.

**298.** You've got to carry your credentials to spirit world. In marriage you can set the condition so that you can say, "Heavenly Father, I served this man unselfishly and purely. I love this person as a representative of the universe and by doing this I broke down all the barriers. There is no racial, cultural or national barrier in my love for this person." When the couple goes anywhere hand in hand together, there is nothing that can block them. They can go straight into the Kingdom of God in heaven with no obstacles. Wonderful!

**299.** In the true home the family members are 100 percent unselfishly united. God has a personality and sense of emotion, so when He looks down at the homes in the world, which would He like to visit? Wherever you live, in whatever society, live the unselfish way of life without barriers.

**300.** When you look at your parents, ask, "For whom do my eyes exist? My eyes exist to appreciate my parents. My eyes have beautiful lines so I can please my parents. My mouth exists to praise my parents. My heart and mind can give them joy. I have ears to receive the good words of my parents. I have arms and legs to serve them." Have you lived like that?

**301.** When you have your own homes, I would like to see you put makeup on your husband's face rather than your own; that would be much more beautiful. How about the husband making up his wife's face. You are laughing, but in reality, there is nothing funny about it.

**302.** If your husband says, "Darling, I want to ride on your back. Can you carry me?" What would you say? American women would say, "No, I should be on your back." But if you say yes and do your absolute best to try to lift him, how beautiful it will be. Then your husband will say, "You did your best. I thank you for it. Now come on my back." He knows his wife is willing to carry him, but she is not that strong, so he will carry her. Thereafter, carrying her becomes very natural and beautiful. What I am trying to describe is just how to serve unselfishly and willingly. From now on, after you get blessed and to the end of your life, will you be a person of service?

*Breaking the Barrier 12-10-78*

**303.** I would like to recommend that you blessed couples stay together as much as possible when you have the chance, even going to the bathroom together and whispering love to each other there. Share the equipment together and when you finish, clean one another up. Would God look down and exclaim at how ridiculous and repulsive you are? No, He would be excited and uplifted to see such love. God's number one rule is that true love is absolute and in that case, it doesn't make any difference where it is expressed—in the bathroom, in the garden; anywhere is fine and that love will bring ecstatic love to God.

**304.** The person who conquers the universe with this true love is going to be your mate; he will be a king of love. He will be the only absolute king of love in your life; he will be your subject and master and for him you will write poetry and songs of love, pouring out your heart. God is almighty in that respect, and He has the ability to make each of you a king of love so you shall have such ecstatic joy as this. God is the king of kings of love, and He is eager to see each of His children becoming kings of love, each creating his own empire of love where God can dwell.

**305.** When a couple with the absolute standard of God's love emerges, they will truly be the king and queen of love and the entire universe will bow down to them. Even God will bow down. History will bow down. They will be practically worshipped, not only by single people but by other couples. Everyone will see in this couple a royal monument of love.

**306.** This is the Principle, that the man or king should bring that absolute love first. After he sets the tradition, he must recreate woman. Therefore, Adam must set the kingship of love, and then Adam and Eve together shall be perfected.

*Spring Season of the Providence 4-1-79*

**307.** If a husband dies, his wife is heartbroken, but why is she so sad? When any couple has a deep love, but one partner dies, the other person's sorrow is a universal expression because their existence as a couple paralleled the life of the universe. If one is missing, then in the view of the universe you are incomplete, and the universe imparts its sorrow to you.

**308.** The parent-child relationship is an absolute one. They must recognize you as their child, and for your sake alone they have an obligation to love each other because the public law of the universe decrees that parents must always be ready to sacrifice for the sake of their children. Not one individual but two brought a child into the world, and therefore, to have the right to look at the child they must be two together. Parents must feel that way and be able to love each other as much as they love their children.

**309.** If a family is living according to universal law the universe is ready to pour down upon them its blessing of complete joy. You may insist you don't want to eat, but the universe will give you blessing regardless. If you insist on blocking your mouth, then the rest of your body will eat instead.

*Mission of Our Life 4-22-79*

**310.** Whenever children fight, they always come to their parents to ask them to be the judge. If children fight in the classroom, they go to their teacher. On every level this is so. Even in a small village there is always someone to be the judge or referee of a fight, and in national affairs it is the same. If the world were caught up in fighting and there were no one to be the judge, it would be very difficult to continue living.

*25<sup>th</sup> Anniversary of the Unification Church 5-1-79*



**311.** Just as you cannot really know how you look, you cannot really know your husband or wife's face too well because it has many aspects. Sometimes you are strongly impressed by the laughing face of your mate, and you cannot forget how he or she beams from ear to ear, for instance. A wife might be impressed with the dignified appearance of her husband, or she might notice some little habit, such as how he shows his tongue when he laughs. If something about your mate makes a strong impression in your mind, you might not want to see other sides of that person. He might snore a lot or have a very ugly side, but you won't remember that. This shows the infinite variety of expressions of love between men and women. There should not be a fixed relationship there. If a man is always serious then no woman could stand him but there is always a variety of expression with joy or anger suddenly bursting forth, and it is there that the beauty of a relationship between a man and woman is found.

**312.** Man is created to live in true love, and when he pursues that true love both vertically and horizontally, he finds true fulfillment in life. When a man and woman unite completely in unchanging true love, then they are each other's pride; a wife and husband want to be proud of each other. Instead of asking the other person to serve you, you want to serve that other person genuinely, feeling that he is the best. When each person feels that way, their relationship is truly something to behold.

**313.** Even if the father dies, the mother has a strong urge to live in order to keep loving her children. Any woman who just wants to re-marry and doesn't care about how her children feel will have nothing left, either love of her children or her husband. Children in that situation feel left out and cold when they are at home, and they usually go their own way. But children whose mother is still devoted and loving them more than ever, even after the father dies, will be completely devoted to them, and never betray her expectations.

**314.** Even though her husband is dead, that woman is not losing anything. More than ever her children will reciprocate the love she is giving them. The more she devotes herself to her children the more they will return love that is even greater than their father's when they grow up, knowing she dedicated her life to them. Then the vertical love between mother and son is more beautiful than the love between the husband and wife. The same is true for man. If the mother dies, then the father can find tremendous beauty and value in loving his children.

**315.** In front of the supreme power of love, everything else is subdued. Women are born to be conquered by the love of men.

*Day of All Things 5-26-79*

**316.** Do you want to fight with your mate? I am warning you that Satan will try to agitate both of you and incite conflict. God will grant Satan permission to interfere with you because He has confidence that you can easily withstand it, but if Satan wins and you hate each other then he will return to God and gloat at how easily you succumbed to him.

**317.** When you have a feeling that Satan is trying to tempt you to complain about how dumb or ugly your husband or wife is and have nothing to do with him or her, remember what I am telling you now about Satan's infiltration. Then close the door and don't let him come in; decide to do exactly the opposite of what Satan hopes. If you are serving and truly humble, then there is no way he can win. This is why I am giving you a three-year training period before the blessing.

*True Couple 5-27-79*

**318.** Those children who are grateful to their own parents are welcomed by the universe. If you have that heart, then you can harmonize with your own brothers and sisters and with nature and of course God would welcome that kind of man and woman:

**319.** I encourage all the blessed mothers to breastfeed their children even just for the time being. Mother always breastfed our first children, but since she has had so many children it has become much more difficult. Still that basic principle is there. Breastfeeding is the best link for a mother and child to truly relate. It is a most beautiful sight for God to see a black mother loving and feeding her white child at her breast. Is it conceivable that a father and mother in that situation would have some racial discrimination?

**320.** I do not support birth control, so have as many [children] as you want.

*Reflection Upon Life 6-1-79*

**321.** Some blessed wives feel they must have some area that is just for their private lives, but I say absolutely not. Every moment of the day is for public ministering. The universe follows this principle as well.

*The Trust Placed in Us 6-3-79*

**322.** During the day a husband and wife are bustling about in many different activities, but at night they are isolated from the rest of the world and the darkness is better for loving each other. The darker the better!

**323.** A father and mother should have a vertical relationship both above and below them in addition to the horizontal line between them. The unchanging line which no one can sway is the vertical line. No matter how many children you have, the father-son relationship is unchangeable. Furthermore, there is an unbroken line from the parents to the grandparents and so forth all the

way back. Is that vertical line crooked and changeable, or unbending? Would your forefathers agree that it is best for the vertical line to be crooked or straight? It should be a straight vertical line which no one can change.

**324.** Parents are those who are willing to give themselves and even die for their children. That is the true tradition of parents. Children as well could give their lives for their parents. That is the tradition of vertical love which God initiated in His love, the fundamental truth of the universe for which we are willing to give our lives. That is what truth is all about.

**325.** Before you talk about loving your husband or wife, you must set the tradition of loving your children, whether spiritual or physical. Why is that? Because of the fall the Cain-type world exists, and we must subjugate it with love bringing it to the true love of the father-son relationship.

**326.** You must be single-minded toward the one woman or one man who is your spouse. In the garden of Eden were there many choices for husband or wife? No, there was only one man and one woman.

**327.** Man and woman are two individuals, but your one focus is love of your child. You love your parents as much as you love your children, and that's how you restore the vertical line. The truth is always simple.

**328.** When you look at a black grandmother or grandfather, don't view them as strangers but as your own grandparents. When you meet people the same age as your parents, whether they are beautiful or ugly you can relate to them as you do to your own parents. When you meet your peers, they are extensions of either your husband or wife. When you meet younger people, see them as your own children, or as your younger brothers and sisters. If you are familiar and comfortable in that way of life then you are living in the one family of the world and you will fit in anywhere in the universe; you will not be rejected anywhere, even in spirit world, because you are the basic cell which can fit anywhere in the world God created.

**329.** When you men look at women, don't do so with the archangel's point of view but from Adam's perspective. Satan always knew that Eve did not belong to him but to Adam, yet he still wondered if there was some way he could conquer her and entice her away. A woman can also harbor the mind of Lucifer looking at a handsome man who is not her husband and wondering if there is some way she can win his attention. The safest way to look at a man is through the eyes of your husband. The men should look at women through their wives. That's essential. When you do so, the entire world will be the extension of your family.

*What Kind of Thought Do You Have? 6-10-79*

**330.** The ultimate competition is that of life. If there is a way to win that competition, it is the ultimate, and for that goal we should be able to give all kinds of sacrifice. In that competition we want to be victorious and set the record.

*Record-Setter of History 7-1-79*

## INTERNATIONAL MARRIAGE

---

1. Those who are single must reach the point where they could marry one of another race and nationality. If you are white, you must be able to marry a Negro; if Negro, an oriental, etc. If you do not reach this point, I cannot recognize you as having reached the international or world-wide standard. The whole world is being restored as a family. The married couples already have partners, so the request will not be made of them. But any single man or woman of the white race must be particularly prepared. In God's eyes, there is no difference at all between the races. For me, it is no problem at all what your race may be.

*Leaders' Address 3-1-65*

2. This is God's world. There are no boundaries. How can you divide this world up as it is? It is one. You must feel this and you must become a universal person. I would like to order these charming young ladies here in this room to marry Negroes in Africa. Does this shock you when I say this? Are they Negroes in the sight of God? I want to see five different colors of mankind living under one roof. Do you see the possibility for this? You must be able to love to the utmost limit. If your love of God reaches that far, is there anyone or anything you refuse? If not, then God will surely pick you a handsome bridegroom. Parents must accept the possibility of a mixed marriage as a natural thing. The segregation problem in the world, particularly in America is most serious. This is the only solution, to welcome them.

*Leaders' Address 5-1-65*

3. We are going to multiply the family under God as one big family. This is our ideology. So, here we have no discrimination between races, color, creed or any such thing as that—no national boundaries here either.

*Master Speaks on Opening Day 1-16-73*

4. In our ideology, the young people would like to have international marriage, rather than marriage between people of the same nationality. The barriers between East and West, the boundaries between nations and between ideologies will be torn down...and after tearing down those boundaries, our young people are ready to intermarry-between people of any nationality-because our ambition is so great, and our desire is so great as to have the whole world in our bosom.

*The Last Front-Line 2-25-73*

5. There is no discrimination of color in God's sight since all are His children.

*Important Person 6-10-73*

6. If you really know the greatness of this ideology, you will not think of marrying a spouse from your own nationality. You will want your marriage to help bring the world into oneness. Then it will be monotonous for a white to marry a white, and wonderful for a white to marry a yellow or black. Interracial marriage will make you people of higher dimension and wider understanding. In that way, the world will sooner become one.

*The World Age and Our Mission 11-3-74*

7. Our most important problem, which must be changed at the earliest possible date, is the notion of being of a certain nationality. We must erase this idea; unless we do this, we cannot leap to the next level.

8. We are advocating international marriage between all the peoples of the world. Only through this intermarriage, which will help to cleanse and restore each lineage can we set up a new tradition of higher dimensions under the will of God.

9. International marriage will make it easier for you to love the world, and to set the highest tradition. If you have an international marriage, you will be famous in the history of the Unification Church.

10. These international families will be pioneering a new life, and naturally, for the first few years at least, they will have disharmony and difficulties. But after overcoming them, it will be a sublime form of the peaceful waters after a storm. I expect a new breed of children to be born of these families, great people of genius who will lead the future world.

*Let Us Set the Tradition 11-17-74*

11. On the practical level: what we have to do from now on is to eradicate racial discrimination; we must imagine that we will be able to live in the same compound, in the same family, black people, yellow people and white people together as brothers and sisters—that is our goal and the ideal.

*Human Life 12-1-74*

12. If we can go beyond racial differences, color of skin, or language and transcend all these difficulties united in the love of True Parents, then we will have found the key to unification of the world.

13. In the future, we will not only live together, we will intermarry. This will truly bring the ideal family in the sight of God. To God, the heavenly blessed wedding is very important. And He would prefer marriage between different races.

*The Significance of the IOWC Work in Japan 1-22-75*

14. Before your being blacks, whites and yellows, you are brothers and sisters under one common Parent.

*The Boundary Point of Victory 2-23-75*

15. God's family includes all races.

*The Kingdom of God on Earth and the Ideal Family 1-1-77*

16. In marriage there is no barrier of heart so there could be no barrier of race or nationality. There are no barriers in the world of love.

*Living Sacrifice 5-8-77*

17. Because I pay more attention to an international marriage, that becomes the tradition of the Unification Church.

18. Generally, international couples experience scorn from the world for being different, like a minority group, but the Unification Church will be the champion for international couples. Eventually I will fully establish this new tradition, and as people see God blessing those international marriages there will be more and more of them throughout the world. Through these marriages the national boundaries and racial differences will automatically be broken, and someday international marriages will be in the majority.

19. I feel that the highest possible heaven will be reserved for the couples who demonstrate their pride in embracing the extremes of interracial marriage.

*Our Pride 6-5-77*

20. You cannot exist for only one race because to repel the other will bring only ruin. There must be total giving and total receiving between races.

21. God is looking for harmony between the races, which is similar to harmony between a mountain and a valley. These same principles work in every phase of our unification way of life, including marriage. The white, black, and yellow races in the East and West can create a new kind of harmonized human race. God wants you to be dramatic. He would most enjoy couples who come from such different backgrounds that they have to travel around the world to visit their relatives. That kind of dramatic visit is more in God's taste. God thinks it is most dramatic and exciting to see a white mother feeding her black baby, and vice versa.

*The Desire of God 6-19-77*

22. There are all kinds of subjects to study in our world, but I think the study of harmony is the most important. After being educated in the "Department of Harmony" would you want to marry within your own cultural and racial background?

23. The quickest way to unite mankind into one family is by intermarriage of the different races. The movement which can elevate such marriages will inevitably bring harmony and unity to the world without war or conflict.

*The Heart of Reunion 9-11-77*

24. When cold water hits a hot surface there is a big explosion; in the same way the ideal marriage will be a universal marriage of East and West. I am the flag-bearer in the quest for unity of the East and West with a chain of love.

25. The international couples will have the privilege of receiving me in their home because that is where the greatest revolution of love is being undertaken. Do I hear any protests?

*The Dividing Peak of Restoration 1-15-78*

26. We come to the conclusion that the more exciting and stimulating heaven can be found where there are more interracial marriages. That is the key.

27. Those couples now and in the future who will marry internationally will have done one thing I didn't do. Those couples are in a special privileged class. I always think that when I go to another country, I want to be the guest of some blessed couple in a heavenly home and will always



look for the international couples first. Wherever I go in the world I will knock on the doors of international couples so those marriages will have some added blessing from heaven. Good sons and daughters will be born to them, but of course they have to pass heaven's test; it's not good if they fight from morning to night. They may not even speak the same language, but if they truly unite in love then God will nod twice, more than usual.

**28.** Those who are already married internationally are the flag-bearers for the heartle cross on the family level. They are bearing an additional burden. It's not easy to live with someone strange and foreign. They are bearing the extra burden for God and humanity. They are committing themselves to an extraordinary course. The time will come when those international couples will be given extra admiration and love. The sooner that time comes, the sooner we will fulfill the Kingdom of God here on earth.

*Resurrected Kingdom of God 3-26-78*

**29.** Are we going to pursue the way of happiness or of sacrifice? Realizing we are in the fallen world; we can safely say it is better to go the way of struggle and sacrifice than of happiness. This is not to be our thinking for just a short while; so if you adopt this thinking 24 hours a day for as long as you live, then without question you have become truly worthy of international marriage.

**30.** Good international marriages are the best way to do away with all the barriers and ties we so often talk about. We are employing the best way to bring all the world into unity. Even if someone were to tie you and your spouse back-to-back with a rope you would still be able to love each other the rest of your lives. If you have such a strong, positive marriage, then the world will come into unity.

**31.** Did the international couples think, "Oh, now I'm in trouble. How am I going to make this work? I don't know my husband's language or customs." Did you couples think you were in much difficulty or were you happy and accepting? Externally you might look crazy to accept such a situation, but internally you are really very wise.

**32.** Is an international marriage very comfortable and easy, or is it meaningful but difficult to work through? This is the cross of love, the cross of heart.

*History and Our Responsibility 7-16-78*

**33.** God can promise one thing: If you treasure your precious blessing, your children will be far better than average. When your marriage is international, God will make certain that your descendants will be superior: people and citizens of heaven. You must realize that we are not

growing up in the ordinary way or thinking, only of marrying within our respective races. We are loving the people of the world, having international marriages because we love people of all races. Under those circumstances your children will truly be universal citizens.

*Crossroads of Life and Death 12-17-78*

**34.** If you ask for international marriage but you get a mate of your own race, then you can still say you were willing to marry someone of another race regardless and God will approve.

*Mission of Our Life 4-22-79*

**35.** Did those who volunteered for interracial marriage accept it because I pushed them? That day I was colorblind. Why is it possible in the Unification Church? Because our goal is to love the world, and as a result there is nothing we cannot digest. For us there is no boundary between races or cultures.

**36.** The marriages of the international couples will not be easy, but I tell you to go ahead and consummate this love, no matter what difficulties you face. Because it is difficult to fulfill, it can be your pride that you have been chosen especially for that mission. We must not forget the great trust and expectation that are invested in us by God and spirit world and history.

**37.** The entire world is watching the couples I have matched to see what kind of children will be born to them and how those families will serve the world. Once they recognize that interracial marriage is working here, the entire world will be turned around.

*The Trust Placed in Us 6-3-79*

# THE RESTORATION OF HEART (Shim Jung)

---

"Shim jung" means heart in Korean or Japanese, but it is very difficult to translate. It means a little more than heart. It means heart, sentiment, and deep love all together.

In the course of restoration, we go the reverse way because man fell in the beginning. Then what is the standard of our restoration? Where are we bound? We want to go back to the original place before the Fall. We cannot do it all by ourselves. First of all, we must be united into one with God. We must become one with our offering. We can reach God through our offering. Because of the disbelief of our first human ancestors, in restoring our way we have to first restore our belief in God. Due to the Fall, man was lost substantially. So, in the course of restoration, we must restore ourselves on the substantial base by fighting against Satan.

When we speak about our heart, it means the heart before the human Fall. To restore our heart, or the affectionate sentiment of heart, we must go back to the place before the Fall. This heart must excel over the satanic heart. In order to win over Satan, we must be able to separate ourselves from him. Due to the human Fall, men were dragged to the satanic side, the side of the archangel. The archangel who seduced man was first in the position of a servant to man. In order for us to be able to restore that much, we must make our heart or affection excel that of the satanic side. We have to restore the standard of our belief. That standard, too, must be more than what our ancestors and saints and prophets of the past have attained. Our belief must not be that which will sway or vacillate because of the satanic elements. God would want us to have an absolute standard of belief. So, our belief must excel that of other people of the world. The attitude of our belief should be unchanging, unique, and eternal. If there is satanic power all around us, that power will want to bar our way. It will want to place obstacles in our way. So, we have to go beyond that power by leaps and bounds.

We must be able to let Satan think, "These people have such a strong belief that we cannot stop their way." Our belief must be such. We must be able to believe what most other people cannot believe. Only after having done that much in our faith can we really elevate ourselves to the desired heart. We want to restore ourselves on the substantial base, and in doing that we have to subjugate Satan on the substantial base. We have to subjugate the substantial Satan. There are two sides to the satanic world: the spiritual level and the physical level. So, the satanic powers have sovereignty over all things, both on the spiritual and physical levels. In winning over Satan, even on the individual level, we have to fight over Satan and win that power. In doing this we are representing all individuals on the family level, all the families of the nation and all nations of the world.

As we well know, when our first ancestors fell, they fell in the stage of growth. Then they lost all the previous stages by their disbelief. So, we have to restore those. When they invaded or nullified their sphere of heart, it was not done by Adam alone, but with the cooperation of Eve. The Divine Principle teaches us that we have to restore our belief, and then restore our substantial

selves: only after having done that can we reach the sphere of heart. All this cannot be done by ourselves alone. A man in the position of Abel must be able to subjugate or absorb those in the position of Cain. And the one in the position of Adam must be united with one in the position of Eve. Those two play the role of the parents of later generations of Abel and Cain put together. Only if those two are put together can they advance to the stage beyond the growth stage. After having gone beyond the level of the growth stage, they have seven more years to go in order to go through the perfection stage. Even though you may be blessed in holy marriage, it means that you have barely reached the last stage of growth. It does not mean that you have reached the last stage of perfection. After you have reached the perfection stage, you no longer stand in a position to be invaded by the satanic power. When the first human ancestors fell, they fell not from the stage of perfection but from the stage of growth. So, when you are blessed, you are barely at that stage. If they fell, we cannot say that they fell from the stage of perfection, because there should be no invasion from Satan. After you have gained that much, you can no longer be invaded by Satan.

When the Messiah comes, he will come on the foundation laid by the Christian world. That foundation is laid on the level of the growth stage. When the Lord of the Second Advent comes, he has already inherited what was accomplished by Jesus and then he is going to accomplish what is left unaccomplished by Jesus on the physical level. Before the Messiah, the way to perfection on the physical level is left unaccomplished. On the physical base, he has to fight against satanic power until he wins over everything on the physical base so that there will be no satanic invasion left. And he will bring it to the spiritual standard, too, in order for him to be able to accomplish that much, both on the spiritual and physical levels. Just as our title shows, we have to restore our heart; but due to the human Fall it means that God lost His sons' and daughters' hearts. In other words, God has had no experience of loving His children from the standard of the heart which He originally intended. To fulfill their part, Adam and Eve should have been blessed by God in holy matrimony and should have experienced holy love in their family. By uniting into one in divine love, they would have been loved by God; but all those things were nullified by the Fall. There should have been descendants from Adam's children whom God could love forming the four positions there. However, man has seen the nullification of parent's love, children's love, and matrimonial love. All those three types of love were nullified. Those three types did not come about stage by stage, but they appeared to restore them all at once. Then, in our restoring those three types of love, we would not restore them stage by stage, but we want to restore them all at once. We cannot restore our heart without help from the outside. We, in the position of Adam and Eve, must be able to subjugate Satan, or bring Satan back to God's bosom. In the beginning, when Adam and Eve fell, they were subjugated by Satan and taken away from Him. If Adam and Eve had not fallen but reached the standard of perfection, they could have enjoyed the love between

themselves, and they could have enjoyed the archangel. The archangel was in the position to serve Adam and Eve, and Adam and Eve were in the position to love the archangel. For this reason, in the course of restoration, Adam and Eve are in the position to have to restore those in the position of the archangel. Unless they do that, they cannot go back to the original position. In light of this Principle, we know that the Old Testament Age is the age on the level of the archangel. In the Old Testament Age, people offered sacrifices before God. The offering those people made was the condition to restore the level of the archangel. In doing that, both the offering and the people who made the offering had to be united into one. Since man fell, satanic blood is running in man's veins. So, man should be learning to drain out the satanic blood. But instead of man, the offering was to be cut in half. For man's part, by becoming one with the offering, he can go through that condition.

Throughout the 4,000 years of Israel's history, God has prepared men by having them make offerings before Him. After having chosen the nation of the Israelites, He was going to send the Messiah. If Jesus was in the position of the Son of God, the foundation of the chosen nation of Israel, laid by God, was in the position of the archangel having accomplished his mission. If the chosen nation of Israel had become one with the Son of God, Jesus, that would have meant that the Son of God and the people of the archangel's position became one, and from then on the next stage of restoration could have been accomplished. In other words, due to the human Fall, Satan took away all things on the individual, family, and national levels. So, by the time of Jesus, those things had to be restored. If the chosen nation of Israel had cooperated with Jesus, they could have stood in the position of the restored nation separated from satanic hands. In the beginning, due to the human Fall, Satan took away individuals, and from then on, their descendants were in the satanic sphere. This means that they have lost both families and the nation under God, since Satan took possession of all those things. In the course of restoration, if the chosen nation of Israel had been cooperative with Jesus, they could have played the role of restoring all those things from the hands of Satan to the hands of God. Then, the Israelites could have cooperated in locating Jesus' bride, who had to be in the position of Eve. They should have done at least that much.

Since Jesus was in the position of Adam having nothing to do with sin, if he had his bride with him, he could have stood in the position of the unfallen human ancestors having nothing to do with sin. From then on, he could have commenced his mission to restore the world. Even after Jesus, there could have been the course of restoring Eve or the bride to Jesus to the Christians of the world. All those things should have been in the lifetime of Jesus. However, he could not find his bride. All of his mission was nullified, and he was put to death on the cross. Due to Jesus' crucifixion on the cross, Christians have not gained the stage of perfection on both the spiritual and physical levels. Since that time all Christians have been wanting to be saved on both the spiritual and physical levels. After 2,000 years of history since the death of Jesus, we have reached this point. The Christian churches at the present moment are barely in the position of the first Israelites. They have not yet reached the point the Israelites had reached. Their mission is great because they have much to be accomplished. We must repeat that the Christian world has not quite reached the standard of the first Israelites at the time of Jesus. So, at the close of the Age, in the

Latter Days, there must appear a group of people who will accomplish the level of the second Israelites. By these people accomplishing their mission, they will open up the channel to the next level of the third Israelites. Since in Jesus' days the first Israelites could not accomplish their mission, the blame is on the chosen nation of Israel. However, Jesus also had a responsibility to fulfill.

The Lord of the Second Advent is the person who is to accomplish the mission left by Jesus both on the spiritual and physical levels. Whether or not the Lord of the Second Advent can accomplish his mission depends solely on whether or not he can bring his people to the level of the first Israelites both on the physical and spiritual levels. At the time of the Second Advent the prepared people in the Christian world must be able to return everything to the Lord of the Second Advent, to minister to him, to believe in him. If they fail to do that, the Lord of the Second Advent must go through all those stages again. If the Christian people of the world have laid the foundation of ultimate belief in God and the Lord of the Second Advent and have accomplished that much on that substantial level waiting for the Second Lord to come, then the Messiah coming the second time can accomplish his mission on the horizontal level by restoring himself, his family, his nation, and the world. In Jesus' days the people should have been one with Jesus both in belief and on the substantial base. Then, Jesus could have carried out his mission in the nation and in the world with a harmonious heart. But since he left that unaccomplished, the Lord of the Second Advent must do that. The mission of Jesus was to receive a bride; since he was in the position of the perfected Adam, he was entitled to have his bride. Then, if that foundation was built at that time on the family level, from then on, he could have carried on the next level of things without satanic invasion. If Jesus had done that much, and if the Israelites had cooperated with him with an ultimate and utter belief in what he was doing, and if those things on the substantial level were restored, then there could have been nothing else that would have mattered or caused any trouble. At that point, if Jesus had done that much, he should have loved those in the position of the archangel, the people of the world, because he was in the position of the restored Adam having found his own family. He had to connect God's love in his family by loving his bride in the position of Eve, and by loving the people around him who were in the position of the archangel. He needed a woman close to him in the position of Eve and a man in the position of the archangel. But since he could not accomplish that much, at the close of the Age when the Lord of the Second Advent comes, the same things must be repeated. If the Christian world is cooperative with the Lord of the Second Advent, he doesn't have to go through those things over again. But since the Christian world is against him, he is going to go through all those things.

What has our movement been doing since the coming of our Parents? Due to the objection or persecution by the Christian world, our Father has to go through all the difficulties and hardships, restoring himself on the individual level and restoring his family. Now he has barely reached the point where he has restored the nation on the spiritual level. The Christian world is in the position of Cain and they have gained a certain level of accomplishment. So, our movement under Father has to restore the level of the nation, to win over the Christian world, which is in the

position of Cain. It is of great significance that our Father made his public appearance, giving speeches in some seven cities in America and two European countries. It was something like a declaration of war against the whole world. At that time, if any objection from the audience had come, and persecution started, the significance would not have been accomplished. But by those people not coming out against what he had to say, Father accomplished his purpose of having solidified his mission on the spiritual and physical levels. Up to that moment, the Christians in the world would always rise up against our movement. But by his giving the public speeches throughout the world he was not faced with any opposition. And by that he could accomplish the world foundation on the spiritual level. So that's why in Korea, the South and North talks came about—to open up the conversation between the godly and the satanic forces. There is a formula, a very solid and strict formula to go through in the course of restoration. People can go to the Heavenly Kingdom of God only by going through and living in the Kingdom of God on earth. We cannot safely say that we have quite reached that point. We have barely reached the point of having set up the foundation on the national level. By his giving speeches to the people of the world he has somewhat laid the foundation on the worldwide spiritual level. So, by accomplishing that much on the physical level, then by uniting those two powers into one, he can reach out to the whole world and restore them. My having brought you to this country from which we are going to subjugate the whole world is for a purpose. That purpose is to subjugate the whole world both on the physical and spiritual levels. From Korea, our Parents came to this country, and from so many European nations and also from Japan, our brothers and sisters are here to work for this cause. In light of this, we are in the position of Master, our Parents are in the position of Jesus with his disciples. You are not quite from twelve countries, but he is going to make this theory. With Father here in the position of Jesus, you are going to be in the position of his twelve disciples. Between the years 1972 and 1974, all these things of restoration must be accomplished. Then, we will have laid the foundation on the worldwide level. What is still left is to restore our heart standard, the standard of our affection, sentiment, and faith in God.

On the individual level when we think of ourselves, have we been able to receive God's love in the position of His children? Have we ever been in the family of God? No! Even though we are married, are we recognized by God, and are we in the position of parents to our children whom God can love? All those things are nothing in God's sight, so we have to restore all those things: ourselves, our matrimonial love, and the love of our children. We have one thing for which we must be grateful, and that is we have our True Parents with us at this moment in the Unified Movement. The True Parents are in the position of God's Son and Daughter, receiving God's love unreservedly and to the fullest extent. You say you are in the position of children to the True Parents, but in the strictest sense you are not quite that because the True Children of the Parents should inherit everything directly from them. Without the human Fall, the True Children of the first ancestors of the True Parents must be ones who were born out of their direct blood lineage. But you are not born in that position. You are born in the satanic world. So, our True Parents are not in the position to have to go down to your level to reach out; but from your part, you must

come closer and closer to them to be united with them and inherit everything they are going to give to you. Do you understand that much?

In other words, you are in the position of the archangel. At best, you are in the position of the substantial archangel having restored yourself to the position of the archangel before the Fall. Even without the Fall, the archangel was in the position to have to minister to Adam. In that position you have to maintain an ultimate belief in the True Parents. Those in the position of the archangel have had as their purpose to welcome the Messiah and to minister to him. Should the Messiah come, they are not in the position to disbelieve him, they are in the position to believe in him. The chosen people, the prepared people, must be in the position of the archangel before the Fall. You must be in the position of the archangel victorious over satanic power, so that Satan can give you up saying, "These people I cannot deal with, I give them up!" The archangel was created in the beginning by God, as someone with whom God could consult about the matter of creating man. The archangel was supposed to glorify and praise God in the creation of man. The archangel was in the position to praise Adam, but he could have envied him. What we are, we owe to God originally; so that what we have been enjoying in the satanic world must be discarded by us and returned to God. We must deny ourselves, our parents, our family, our friends, and everything else to return to God, or give those things back to God. When I say you are in the position of the archangel, it means that you are born before the coming of the Lord of the Second Advent. The archangel was in the position to have to minister to Adam while he was still in childhood, to look after and take care of him until he reached his maturity. But the situation was not like that. When you joined the Divine Principle movement, our Father was already there, having reached his maturity. In the meantime, those in the position of the archangel should have ministered to Adam while he was still in the mother's womb, and after birth had to minister to him until he reached maturity and should have ministered to him ever since. Without your doing that, there is no such thing as perfect restoration possible. In what way can you restore that position? You have Father's children to minister to. Whereas you have not been able to minister to Father directly from his infancy until his maturity, you are going to do that with his children by ministering to them from their birth to their maturity. You, who are in the position of the archangel, are in another sense in the position of Cain. So, you now would want to become the restored Cain. Since the beginning, due to the human fall, the person in the position of Cain would fight against Abel and would deny Abel. But now you must cooperate with Father's own children, and by Cain uniting with Abel's children and becoming one, you can be one with the True Parents. By your becoming entirely one with his own children, the Parents love you as though you were his own children up to your maturity. In doing that, you must be united in heart and in love with his own children. By being united on the level of heart, you have restored the level of heart in you, and you are in the position to be loved by the True Parents as they would love their own children. In other words, in order for you to be loved by the True Parents, you must put yourself in the position of Cain and love his own children in the position of Abel on the level of real affection and heart, and then you are playing the role of the hedge between the satanic and godly worlds. You can prevent Satan from invading his family or his sphere under God. Adam and Eve, by becoming one in the satanic



temptation, fell in the beginning; so, by Father's becoming one with Mother, and you becoming one with them, you can be lifted. On that level, you must be able to experience parental love—love from the True Parents. By experiencing the True Parent's love, you must be in the position of their children being raised.

You are reborn in this world of Divine Principle, and through being raised by the Parents' love, you reach maturity. When you are blessed in holy matrimony, you are really recognized couples in God's sight. In your lifetime you must be experiencing children's love, God's love and parents' love in the children's position, and the love of couples or husband and wife position. Then you will be able to share your love in the position of parents to your own descendants. Only after having experienced all those three types of love, can you reach God and can you be in God's love sphere. In the Garden of Eden before the human Fall, there were only four realities: Adam, Eve, the archangel and God. Before the human Fall, Adam was the first human ancestor, and the Lord, the Messiah, in the position of Adam. All the male beings are in the position of the Lord, while female beings are in the position of Eve or his bride. Again, in another sense, men are in the position of the archangel because they are living in the fallen world. In the triangular relationship of our Father as the Messiah and the female and male, the male beings are in the position of the archangel, while Father is in the position of Adam. The female members are in the position of Eve. So, he is closer to the female members, and through them he will reach those in the position of the archangel. The female members must be feeling the love of our Father in the position of his daughters. He must be able to restore the feeling of love by Eve in the position of Eve towards Adam and in the position of mother towards father. After having gone beyond that level of love, they can influence the male beings.

At the time of the human fall, the archangel tempted Eve; so now in the course of restoration, they must not be tempted, but they must be drawn to Eve and through Eve they can reach the True Parents. In light of that principle, it is well said that the U.S. is in the position of the archangel. The law of divine love will reach the male beings, who are in the position of the archangel, by going through God, through the True Parents and through Eve. More than the male beings, the female beings will feel affection toward Father, and at the moment they see Father they will feel like daughters. Then they would feel a sort of matrimonial love. In other words, they would feel, "I would like to marry a man like Father." Next comes the feeling of loving her elder or younger brothers. She would feel brotherly love in him. Then, having matured and being blessed by him, she would restore her position of the true mother to her own descendants. After having gone through all those types of love in her sensation, she will be really matured in the Principle and then dreams would come to the female. The reason for that is that Eve lost all three types of love due to the Fall in the beginning. So, in the course of restoration, she would want to restore all those types of love at once. The male members, who are in the position of the archangel, even though they are anxious to reach the True Parents must go through Eve, because in the beginning it was the archangel who tempted Eve.

In the course of restoration, the members in the position of Eve must be drawing you to God's side or to the side of the True Parents. You must go through them to reach the True Parents. So, in the time of your blessing in holy matrimony, the male beings must not be aggressive to feel the attachment to the girls and be positive in loving them. You can never do that. First of all, orders will come from your Father and through that he will have God choose your mates. Since you male members are in the position of the archangel, who committed the sin of tempting Eve, you are not entitled to choose your spouses. But the female members who have inherited the True Parents' heart are entitled to or qualified for the choice of their spouses. Once you are joined in holy matrimony, your wife is in the position of mother. Your wife, having restored or inherited the loving heart from the Parents, makes you feel as though she is your daughter, your sister, your wife, your mother and everything. Unless you feel that, you are not going to be restored to being a perfected Adam. You cannot be restored to the Heavenly Kingdom unless you feel all those things, all those types of love through your wife. As I said before, those who are in the position of Eve will have inherited the loving heart from our True Parents acting in Adam's position. Through them you will experience those three types of love. So, unless you are drawn to them by the three types of love (sisterly, daughterly, and motherly), unless you experience all those three types of love through your wife, you cannot inherit those three types through her. For the first three years after holy marriage, you must minister to your wives.

Among the female members here will those who have been seeing Father in their dreams hold up your hands? In fact, all of you should be seeing Father in your dreams. Very often the same thing will happen to male members. In that case, you are in the position of the bride to him, and you miss him and see him in your dreams. When your spiritual standard is higher than the female members, you will see him. In that case he will appear to you in the position of your elder brother. But you are not so much drawn to him as in the case of the female members. Since you are born into the world in the position of the archangel, it is very difficult for you to go beyond the level of heart. But if you have the heart of love excelling that of the female, you will be drawn to him in dreams as though you were in the position of his spouse. This quality of love is something the outsiders cannot understand about our work here because in this movement we have something different from other groups. So, when you experience this kind of heart of love in your visions or dreams on the spiritual level, you must cherish it. If that heart of love is so elevated as to reach a certain standard, you will be communicating with the spirit world because you are far more than what all other Christians are at that point. If you would aspire to him and miss him every moment, then your spirit is elevated to be able to see him face to face in daily life. You will live in his presence, and you can see him and live with him with open eyes. In that case distance doesn't matter, and you can experience things of higher dimension right here in your daily life every moment of the day. You have to be able to experience these things more than you used to before joining this group. Without your being able to create that kind of spiritual atmosphere in and around you, you cannot say that you have experienced God's love.

Those who are married in holy blessing must lead their lives under the guidance of our True Parents—directly under their guidance. Out of the two, if one of the couple would have a higher spiritual standard than the other, through that channel God or the True Parents will teach them how to live. Everything you see in visions and dreams must be talked about in the family, and you must always consult each other on how to do things and in what manner to carry out your mission. After all, the Kingdom of God is the kingdom of love. The path leading to the world of love is the path of love, too. But in the present world, since we are born out of satanic lineage, we have our parents in the satanic world. Some have their spouses in the satanic world and their children, too. But if you want to restore yourself in the love of God, you must lift the heart of your love to be united into that of God. In that light we can well say that we are brothers and sisters in the Divine Principle Family. We must be united into one in a higher dimension of love of God than we experienced in the outside world. With that standard we have to create an atmosphere of heavenly, divine love centering on our True Parents.

In a word, due to the human Fall, three types of love were lost in the very beginning. They were lost in one instant. So, in the restoration course, when we try to restore those three types, we must try to regain them all at once. The blessing is to be done on this level: in the beginning, when our first human ancestors fell, Adam and Eve became one in the evil power and fell far below the level of formation. Then, in regaining this position, we have to restore ourselves in the position of Adam and Eve united into one in the godly path. In falling, these two lost three types of love and by losing those they fell. So, in restoring ourselves, we have to restore three hearts or three loves. By losing these three types of heart or love, they became false parents, and by restoring these three types of love, we are going to become True Parents.

Even after we are blessed, we have still seven more years to go. Within the seven year course in the Divine Principle movement, Father has set up holidays—Parents' Day, Children's Day, World Day and God's Day. That should have been done during the seven-year course. Since even at the point of being blessed you still have the seven-year course left to reach the perfection stage, without your being united into one with Father, who has established that much to reach the standard of perfection, you cannot really be perfected. The last stage of perfection is the sphere of domination-indirect sphere of domination. So, only by becoming one with Father can you go through that stage without satanic invasion. If you don't excel in the heart of love toward God during that interval, you are liable to be vulnerable for the invasion of Satan. So, the central point or the first point in order to go through that seven-year course is love. The point is to be united in the love of the True Parents, and by becoming entirely one with them in great love, you can surpass the people of the satanic world on the individual level and family level. You are in the position of the child being loved by God, in the position of the couple being loved by God, and in the position of parents in the love of God being able to love your own children. In other words, since our True Parents are already one with God, by becoming one with your True Parents, you are in the position of True Parents to other people of the world. If you would not let that position go and just cling to him and become one with him, you can safely pass through that seven-year course. After going

through that last stage of perfection, you are going to enter the direct dominion of God. If you are in the direct dominion of God, there is no such thing as satanic invasion there. There, you will be free from satanic invasion. You will have nothing to do with satanic power there, so in liberation from any darkness without any satanic power pulling you backwards, you will enjoy utter happiness.

I must repeat: in order to go on the seven-year course from here, even though you are blessed, you have to be able to deny all your past, all that you have had in the past, and you must be one with our True Parents, and start your new life over again from that point—denying your past families, friends, neighbors and relatives. By becoming one with the True Parents, you can reach that point safely. During that seven-year course, you must be able to restore your heart of love in God—in the True Parents. During that course you must not be distracted to look at beautiful women or handsome men in the outside world. However handsome and beautiful they may be, they will be far below the level where you are in God's sight. You must remember that Jesus had to go through the stages after his marriage. If the chosen nation of Israel was cooperative with Jesus, he could have accomplished his mission this far, and in seven years he could have reached the perfection stage, where no satanic invasion is possible. We must know that we can never enter the Kingdom of God without having our spouse blessed in holy marriage. In that case you must excel the position of Adam and Eve before the Fall. Both of you together must be able to go to the Kingdom of God. Jesus could not accomplish that much on both the spiritual and physical levels. So, he said he was going to come again, and after coming again in the flesh he was going to marry, and by building his family he could have reached that standard. Where are you situated? What is your position—is your position far better off than Jesus' position? (Better!) Why is it so? Because you can become higher, you can reach maturity and be blessed.

First of all, you are more than Jesus was because you have your True Parents. Jesus was going to marry a bride to stand in the position of the True Parents. Your True Parents have already done that and you are in the position to have to do that in the future. You are not in the position to be persecuted by the people of the world as Jesus was. Even though the people of the world may persecute you, you can go on and be blessed by the True Parents, and they can never kill you. On the foundation which our Father has already laid, you are going to be the ones who can be blessed by their hands. You are in a position more elevated than Jesus. You must be grateful for having your Parents among you. In order for you to do that, you must restore the heart of love. Being connected with him in divine love, in your daily life, you would feel so much love toward your Father. The height of your love toward God and our True Parents will decide how elevated your spiritual standard is. You must always have a longing heart to see his family, his nation and the whole world established under God's will. You must be cooperative with him to establish the Kingdom on earth. The standard of how to establish the Kingdom of God on earth is the restoration of the heart of love on the family, tribal, nation and worldwide levels. By spreading and multiplying the love of God already planted within us, by sharing that with other people of the world, we will be able to establish the Kingdom of God in God's love.

It will be a treasure for you to have the experience of missing our True Parent! To such an extent that you will be crying, missing him, and you will want to see him every minute of the day, and you would want to have him with you whenever you do anything. That's the only occasion when you will really appreciate the mission God has given you. If you have such an experience, for instance, of seeing him in a vision or a dream, and if you feel like being united with him and seeing him, this is a precious experience. Then you may make statistics on what kind of dream you had and note that on the next day you had several other kinds of dreams and visions. If you go on cultivating such experiences, you will reach the point where your heart will be broadened to be a channel of communication with the spirit world. Then your life in faith will be an experiential one, and if God is sad, you immediately feel sad. If God is happy, you become hilarious at that moment. In that world you will feel ecstasy and feel like dancing about when God is happy. The people in faith must have such experiences as many times as possible during one day. When you are in that stage, on that level, you can even foresee what is coming that day. You must be on the base which your True Parents have laid, and by uniting with them you are in the position to see things and to predict things, and to feel what is coming. If you are in that depth of faith, you can just casually be sitting here, and God will teach you. God will reveal Himself before you, guiding you always. When you are about to leave your home for somewhere, you will immediately sense whether something great or something mischievous will happen there. You must have the attitude of having God living in and abiding within you. So, whenever you are faced with anything, whenever you are going to do anything, you must consult your mind, where God is abiding—then you will not fail to do things. Do you have any questions?

Is it true that our original minds should be restored before our hearts? In a way, yes, because only after restoring your original mind can you see God working through you. But only by restoring the love of heart to the True Parents, to the love of God, can you restore the original mind. Even among the male members, when their depth of faith or ardor is so elevated as to see Father in visions and in dreams, they would miss him with almost tearful eyes and aching heart. Because if your parents are away, you would miss them and long to see them. It's more than that you feel for your physical parents, so you would miss them with aching heart and tearful eyes. By original mind we mean the basis receptive to God's love. Or, if you don't find your original mind being receptive to God's love, you cannot say that you have quite restored your original mind.

The most important thing we have learned today is the restoration of the heart of love. The core of what Father has said this morning is the restoration of the heart of love. So, you must remember that before the Fall, Adam and Eve could have enjoyed parental love, matrimonial love and children's love—all centered on God's love. There could have been grandparents, grandchildren, great grandparents and great grandchildren, uncles and aunts—all in one under God's love, in utter harmony and beauty. In the Unified Family you must be feeling that. For instance, a girl must be feeling the same thing. If you have another female member above your age, you must think she is in the position of your elder sister. For the ones younger than you, you must feel the sensation of love you would have toward your younger sister, and you would feel

toward still smaller ones as though they were your own children. Some you will love as though they were your own aunts, your mother, your grandmother, your great grandmother. Toward the male folks you must feel like they are your sons, your younger brothers, elder brothers, your uncles, your father, or you feel as you would toward your great grandfather, or great grandson. You must feel the love in your family according to their ages. You must have that kind of experience in divine love. Unless you do that, you are not qualified to be real members of the Unified Family. I want you to know that, and to realize that in your daily life. That is the realization of the restored heart of love. Only by putting that into practice can you enter the Kingdom of God.

*The Restoration of Heart (Shim Jung) 2-20-73*

## GOD'S NATION

---

1. For the providence of God to come to the world-wide level, there must come forth one nation which will sacrifice herself for the whole world. God is demanding that one nation come forth and sacrifice herself for the prosperity of all the world and the blessing of all mankind. God needs such a nation. Such a representative nation will become a sacrifice for the world.

2. Always in the providence of God the thing that matters most is the nation because the nation is the fundamental unit for all things. Even in the satanic world, the nation is the base for the work of Satan. God is looking for that representative country; through that country He will inherit the world.

*The Ideal World 12-11-71*

3. We have to come out of the satanic world first. We must have a different feeling from people in the outside world. We must be able to feel the love of God. We must hate what Satan loves. We must sacrifice ourselves for the sake of the whole world. With our Father in the center, if we individually win on the individual level, and on the world-wide level, we can form the third Israel, the chosen nation of Israel, spiritual Israelites, again; and through us, God can save the whole of mankind, both on the spiritual level and the physical, too.

*Things Found Most Important in Leading a Life of Faith 12-12-71*

4. Without our nation we are nothing—it is very miserable.

*How God is Pursuing His Restoration Providence 12-22-71*

5. You have to remember this: Jesus came to restore a nation, but because he did not do that, all the Jewish people went through such a miserable period. If Jesus could have restored the nation, then he would have been the King of Kings within his own lifetime. So, you should not forget this: you have to seek and find the True Parents, you have to become one with them, and you have to restore the nation with them. You can't forget this. We must resent the fact that we cannot see such a nation, we cannot live in such a nation, and we cannot have goods produced in such a nation. Thus, we use holy salt to sanctify. In that nation (of the future) we won't use holy salt—we will not need to use holy salt because the things which are made by the children of God can be used; they will be sanctified. That is the way for the highest children to go, and that is the way they

dedicate their loyalty to Him. That is the mind and feeling of God. God has worked for His children to live in God's country—to live with things made by the children of God. God thinks of things that way; therefore, Father thinks and feels that way also. Therefore, we should live on this earth under the protection of God's country. Those who live in that country, together with the spirit world, will live there forever with God's love. That is God's ideal. And how will it be-forming the Kingdom of Heaven and living there together? Therefore, you should be that way, just like God and our Father. When we find such a nation, then we will live in the perfect truth, we will live in the perfect personal character, and we will live with the perfect love of God in that nation. And you will be guaranteed the perfect right, the authority of the Principle. From that, all other nations, all other worlds will be subdued by this nation.

6. In that world, in that country, in that nation, all people will live together believing with each other, loving each other in the full heart of God's love; and by living in that nation, you can grow into the Kingdom of Heaven in the spirit world. That nation becomes the nation of perfected truth, perfected character, and perfected love. That is the Kingdom of Heaven. We cannot resist the subject of that nation. Have you resisted? You are resisting America. In order to go to the Kingdom of Heaven, we have to assist the heavenly nation. He hopes all of you will work as the children of the True Parents on behalf of the True Parents, and that you will do your best, devote your whole hearts to the restoration of God's nation.

*Divine Providence and the Turning Point of History 12-23-71*

7. Because the Principle is that the world can only be restored upon the base of a nation. Without that nation the world cannot be restored. Consequently, the most important thing is the restoration of the nation.

*Safeguard the Unified Front 12-31-71*

8. I am not a Korean. I am the one who has gone through persecution in that nation, Korea. I have no citizenship whatsoever in any nation. I have no nation. I am a citizen only of the Kingdom of Heaven. We, all of us, are without a nation in that sense. What is your nation? (The Heavenly Kingdom!) Has God's Kingdom been established on earth? (No!) When you have no nation, you are apt to be sacrificed or become a victim of other powers.

9. Without God's being able to find a nation of His choice, He cannot have other nations become one to make the whole world under God's will.

*The True Path of Restoration 1-11-72*



**10.** This means that the God-centered chosen nation must be founded on a base of total victory against the satanic world, from the individual to the nation. For God's will to be fulfilled this nation must become a reality. We must choose one nation out of all nations and raise this nation to be a God-centered nation.

**11.** If one nation is restored, the leader of that nation knows the wisdom of Divine Principle and he comes to the Kingdom of Heaven. Then the entire nation can be saved. By educating those people they can enter the Kingdom of Heaven. In the future, the Divine Principle will be taught in every school. From primary school and middle school and on to university. If they are taught from childhood, it will be very easy. We are living in the fallen world and there are many obstacles for one to understand the truth. But if you live in the restored world, the Kingdom of Heaven, it will not be difficult to understand.

**12.** After we restore one nation, we will not have to reach the past history, and this will also simplify it more. To convince them, we give them evidence, but the most important thing is to make a person believe in the existence of God. If they believe in that, there will be no trouble. God must live in our life, in our living. Man must feel that God lives with him, in his life, in this world, and also that God makes the future world to come. The most important thing is to teach people to understand the existence of God. The Principle of Creation is for that purpose and Part Two proves it.

**13.** Because Satan has so many different nations all under his sovereignty, God must have His own superior divine sovereignty in order to challenge this satanic sovereignty and bring about restoration.

**14.** The focal point of God, or the central point of God is to restore one sovereignty, which would serve in the position of the chosen nation of Israel at the time of Jesus Christ.

*Leaders' Speech 3-16-72*

**15.** God has been teaching this people, the people of His chosen nation, a tradition whereby a man is the sacrifice for the family, the family is the sacrifice for the well-being of the tribe, the tribe is for the race, the race is for the nation and ultimately that chosen nation is not for themselves but for the world

**16.** God is seeking one nation that will go beyond nationalism, beyond the national profit or the national interest, and go forward as a sacrifice for world salvation.

*Ideal World for God and Man 3-21-72*

17. There must be one nation who can sacrifice her country and her people for the establishment of the ideal world—when we find such a nation, we can have hope for one ideal world. That nation does not exist for her own benefit but for the interests of the whole world.

*How Will the Unified World be Established on Earth? 12-21-72*

18. You must have a nation of God's choice, and you must miss that nation and the people of that nation all the time, more than you do your own nation. If you are without that much sensation, you will be wavering all the way through.

*God's Day Speech 7 a.m. 1-1-73*

19. What do you have to have in order to establish a nation? What are the three elements in the government? Sovereignty, land, and people. We must have sovereignty, land, and people.

*Our Fatherland 1-17-73*

20. Then what is the definition of the true nation? From this formula, a true nation must be one which sacrifices itself for the sake of the communities and families in the nation, and externally reaches out to the other nations of the world. That must be the true nation.

*To Whom Do I Belong 1-16-77*

21. After forming the family, we need a nation. The composition of a nation is simple; it is an expansion of the formula for the family heaven. The father and mother together in the heavenly home are the visible representatives of God on the family level. There are many nationalities gathered together in this room, and who could we name as the sovereign of such a nation? God's direct representative should be the center of that nation, and the representative of God is the position of father—father of the people, all citizens and all nations.

22. All our society is linked by this same principle, for example, a teacher and students in school. The students are in the son's position as far as the teacher is concerned and the teacher is like the parent of the students. Who should initiate love and giving? The teacher should give to the children. In the heavenly world the teacher who is working only for a salary is not a true teacher. A teacher should work out of love and should be giving love. He should not continue as a teacher without disseminating his own love to his students.

**23.** The president of the corporation is in the position of parent, and he should care for his employees as he would for his own children. They are in this position in respect to love. The Kingdom of God here on earth is the world where this formula of the father and son relationship is utilized and expanded in every segment of our society.

**24.** The head of the nation should be a representative of God and father of all the citizens. A father and mother united with the people in the position of children would make the nation the extension of the formula of the family heaven. The goal of a national parent is the prosperity and glory of the nation, not just of one family or one home. The same person who is the center of the nation must be the center of the family, center of the husband and wife, center of the individual. In other words, that person can bear the bigger burden of the nation. Instead of many different individuals, one person is the central axis of the Kingdom of God on earth.

*Basic Formula for the Realization of the Kingdom of God on Earth 1-1-78*

**25.** Young people must be motivated to live purposeful lives instead of spending their time in leisurely activity, pursuing carnal desires and pleasure. God created man to live creative, active, full lives, and a welfare system only discourages that. The present system is so well-established and regulated that it is very difficult to bring about changes, but we must introduce God's way of life regardless.

**26.** The entire national system will be based on the family as the building block of our heavenly society.

*The Dividing Peak of Restoration 1-15-78*

**27.** God has always been leading history, and if a good civilization reaches the peak, it is because God was helping it. Do not be proud of how many languages you speak unless you are able to speak the language of God's country. You have to think that you need to learn the language which God uses. From now on we must be able to recognize and learn the mother tongue. How could we be proud of speaking English if it isn't the language God uses? The possibility is great that He won't use English.

*I Proclaim That I Know 4-1-78*

**28.** What are we doing to prepare for the future? We will prepare everything even an economy that can produce more goods in a better way. We will have a more elevated diplomacy, one which

doesn't hurt other peoples' feelings but makes harmonious relations. We will have art that all mankind can look up to. We are preparing now to love these things because they are our final objective. Therefore, we must prepare in a very concrete way now.

*For the Future 9-10-78*

**29.** The true land is not a fantasy of our dreams or in spirit world. The homeland and father country are going to be right here on earth where we are going to build one nation. That fatherland is the one place you can call your homeland. However, so far, we cannot claim any nation in the name of God. Does God dwell in Washington or Moscow? Our duty is to build the homeland and father country centered upon God.

**30.** Your homeland is the place where your parents and true love live, and where there is a longing for true brothers and sisters. There is complete freedom in that homeland. Today it's true we don't have that freedom in the Unification Church. Because we have a mission to complete, we are working in a disciplined crusade. Not only you are bound by your mission, I am too. At this time, living within this discipline is freedom and brings substantial tranquility because when you finish the mission you will have the entire homeland and father world at your fingertips. Then you can live it and breathe it and enjoy it for eternity.

*Let Us Restore Our Homeland and Fatherland 1-14-79*

**31.** A genuinely good society begins with good parents, then children who grow up in gratitude and go out to relate to society through their teachers, and to their nation through the head of state and finally to the world. After the parents raise their children a number of years, they pass the baton to the teachers to educate them; they in turn pass the students to the society and the nation will take up the baton. In that way a person can take up a higher mission all the time.

*Reflection Upon Life 6-1-79*

## LEADERSHIP

---

1. There are many who can be critical of the situation. Even a three-year-old can criticize. Criticism is not a virtue. Great leadership consists of knowing the circumstances and controlling them for a certain purpose.

2. The leader learns from everyone, from you, from children, from those who are insane, and from the ignorant laborer. They all inspire him.

*Master Speaks 3-1-65*

3. The true religious leader is crying out to the multitudes of people who are miserably defeated in this world. That Leader is here. This is why to be a true religious leader I have to go the road of tears. If you don't have it, then you weep because you cannot get it; you are sorry and you have nothing. This is the path of God and the road of Jesus, who are always one step ahead of your misery. Even before misery and hurt hit you, God already tastes the hardship, and He is one step ahead of you. When you see some unfortunate things happen in the road you must have such a loving heart that you cannot just pass by. You must physically experience, physically feel and live as if this world is waiting for your hand and your service.

4. How can man transform himself into understanding the heart of Christ so that every individual related with him is his responsibility? I was tortured in prison, and I lost much blood. At that critical moment, I could not pray to God for myself since I knew so clearly that God loved the one who was in my position. I knew He understood my miserable situation. Every time I was in difficulty my word to Father was this: "Father, don't worry about me. Since the rugged path of the restoration of the world is still far away, I want to carry the burden. Father, let me go first, before you, Father." If you are parents and have children, I think you understand this feeling. If your children really hit your heart deep in love, tears of gratitude flow. You can really feel the heart of the Father in love. God is looking for that man who can touch His heart, who can give God joy. The universe will focus upon him. This is one reason the Divine Principle Movement is known as "Family." It is a "Family" movement no matter how big we might become.

*Leaders' Address 3-14-65*

5. When you eat a meal, feel that you are doing this for the entire three billion persons on earth rather than just for yourself. In everything you do, feel that your acts are on a universal scale rather than confined to just yourself. Think big! Expand your thoughts to the entire universe, the world

and the United States. Be a messiah yourself. A messiah may motivate or inspire others. Eventually all men will become messiahs or Christs.

*Leaders' Address 4-21-65*

6. We of the Divine Principle are going to create men like this, the world's strongest and most courageous true heroes. They are also the most truly rich. These men will be leaders who never ever tolerate injustice in the sight of God. Be like this. If you see somebody unreasonably persecuted in the street, you must feel the wrath of God. Be angry sometimes. If your feeling of anger is for God, for justice, it is not a sin.

*Leaders' Address 5-1-65*

7. Always those in the leader's position should think in terms of 24 hours, in what way am I spending them, in what way have I spent them for others or for myself-for this work or for other reasons? It is entirely wrong if the leader's position holders think that "I will get the benefit or blessing at the present in my position." Instead of trying to get the blessing, you work on it and bring the people, work for others, then the people will help you who are in the leader's position. Naturally, they must help you. The leader's position holder should direct the existing established members forward to higher levels of advancement, trying, instead of clinging to that same position to let them move forward, to elevate them to a higher level. Then they will be glad, clearly. Then you will receive the appreciation of those people who are elevated by you. You accept their appreciation. If you look at it this way, there will be no criticism toward leaders. Do you understand? If you do things this way, there will be no criticism toward the leaders.

8. For the leaders or directors, before you transfer such a person to other places, you have to seriously pray with a sincere desire. You have to really pray. There are many categories of people in our group. Somebody is doing all right, somebody is doing wrong, some will not be accepted, some will be acceptable. A variety of different personalities must exist in our movement. When you deal with such a decision for the matter or cause of the transference you have to really seriously consider the matter with prayer, in order to not have any unexpected error or mistakes.

*Our Road to Go 1-9-72*

9. You have to analyze your accumulated table of status which might help you. As a leader, you cannot expect that person to adjust to you. You have to direct yourself so that you are ready to adjust to that person. Don't make them adjust to you. You adapt first, then you will have give and

take from subject and object positions and then you will lead them to you. So do not think "He has to adjust to me." If you as a leader do not expect others to adjust to you, but you yourself can adjust to them, then everybody will be like the leader. Because you have adjusted to hundreds of people, everybody likes you. Sincerity is necessary here instead of means or methods. You must show sincerity.

**10.** There are two ways to guide these people as a leader, a direct approach, or an indirect approach. You will probably find yourself in a situation where the person you are talking to is just not opening his heart. Sometimes, this person might have some inside torture or uneasiness, or painful experience when he sees us living together, brother and sister. This is a sort of high-pressure relationship. A peer relationship is important. Sometimes that person to whom you can't convey our ideas will have inner struggles because of these other peer groups that influence him. At some time, you can bring him over privately, in a quiet way making a new approach in the sense that you can talk with him. Then, that person will really feel your concern, whether you are right or entirely wrong. So, you have to be sympathetic, and you have to tune in to those people who have trouble because of peer acquaintances and influences. Then, from there, you can easily open some other avenue through which you can reach him. If that person begins to feel he is needed, then he will realize that he can talk to you, he will open up because he will see your concern for him. Then the relationship is settled, and you can begin your new working relationship with that person instead of scolding him for being right or wrong. Sometimes you can immediately pinpoint where he is thinking wrong through your prayer as a spiritual leader. You can even, without asking him why he is thinking such a thing, immediately know his heart and soul without hearing anything. You have to develop your vertical level in the spiritual area as a leader. Then those people never go out of the center or the Principle if you lead them in this way.

**11.** You have to recognize how you appear to the other person. You should even understand what kind of facial expression or mannerism you are projecting. You have to visualize yourself as a leader when you are going to have to deal with many people. Then all the followers of the leader will know his mannerisms when he is happy or sad. Do not lose that. Their image of you as a leader should be that way. The same applies to when you see other people.

**12.** Sometimes you have to be firm, and harsh, too. Sometimes you will travel high, above him, and sometimes in parallel situations. As a leader, you have to do something more than ordinary people do. Sometimes you have to know more about the person you are working with than about other people.

*Master Speaks (Berkeley) 1-12-72*

**13.** Even though you may be in the position of the leader, you cannot have your members under you just obey you unconditionally, ordering them to do this or that. With those people under you,

you can play the role of the commander or the leader. Those people made you their leader, so in order to keep your position as a qualified leader you must come down to the level of your members, serve them, and be recognized and served by them. They, as well as you, are in the position of fallen men and you are made the leader above them, so you are indebted to them in a way. In order to repay them you must come down to them and serve them. Only by serving them can you qualify to be their leader. If you take yourself too dearly, wanting them to serve you alone, then you will become the second Satan.

*Change of Blood Lineage (III) 1-21-73*

**14.** In order to be a leader, you must be the synthetic home of every artistic field—you must have every element of every walk of life. You must know how to learn good points from many people with many different qualities.

**15.** I must again tell you to be a good public servant and good peacemaker and good triangular relationship maker, and to keep and shine out the dignity of God through you; and, added to that, more points: How to express; how to make your expression in a wholesome way—how to keep your attitude sane and sound; how to act out things and say things. I want you to be persons with weight and depth so that other people will not have found you out in a few days, but you should be a person in whom people will find more and more things over a long span of time. As a leader, you must have that quality. Did I make myself understood? Don't reveal all you have in an instant.

**16.** Sometimes I am like a child, giggling and playing with the boys and girls, and sometimes I am so dignified as to be friends to the very old people. You can find many, many different qualities in me. I have so many qualities covering the extreme ends. When I go hunting, I am a good hunter, and our members are surprised to know that I am such a good hunter. I am a good fisherman and meditate deeply so as not to hear anything said or any sound when I go fishing. So you cannot readily define what kind of man I am. Some may think that I am such a serious man, slow to anger, quick to act. I am sometimes as furious as fire, dashing out to do things by myself. I am so aggressive. You must study me, and any other person and learn the good qualities from each person.

**17.** We can safely say that an evangelist is a mediator, and a mediator is in the position of public servant. That's your most important function as a mediator. I want you to know that. You must be interested in knowing the advantages and interests of both parties and you must be able to control both.

**18.** You must be authoritative with words. You must be able to say things with authority. Words will connect those people.



**19.** If you have divine authority, everyone will bow down before you. Everyone will be interested in what you are saying, what you are doing. They will be ready to follow you with you as the center. If you are with that dignity and that authority, you are in the position of mediator, and you will be able to connect God and whatever there is below.

**20.** You must be really serious when you are in a position to be the leader. The position of a leader in this movement is to carry out the divine course. If you do wrong, you are committing sins. Your failure influences other people, too, so you are committing something very serious.

**21.** Being a public servant is something like being a person without anything you can claim as yours. Your everything, your whole being, is for the sake of this man and that man. People on both sides may have to think that what you have is theirs and they can get something out of you. Unless that takes place you cannot call yourself a good public servant. If you call yourself a public servant, that means that you have no share to claim as yours and you will come last.

**22.** God is doing only good things while Satan is doing only evil things. But man, in between them will vacillate-sometimes belonging to God's side and sometimes belonging to the other side. But you as a leader or mediator must go straight forward, never vacillating. When you bring in the people, then it means that you have grafted that person to yourself. So, what you have given in doing that will make him what he is. If you have given poor nourishment to him, he will not grow wholesomely and your spiritual children, however many you have raised, if you have not been good to them, their fruit will not be wholesome. So, in meeting even a single person you must not do that without concentrating on that person—focusing your attention.

*The Attitude of An Evangelist 1-26-73*

**23.** If the leader is wise, he will choose at least three of his members and serve them, ministering to them by putting them in the position of Abel. He will not fail in carrying out his mission this way. That man will be saved; elevated to the higher dimension of faith when he does that. The more energy you give to him and the more you love him, the more you will be loved by God.

*Our Life in the Kingdom of God 1-28-73*

**24.** Who becomes subject? The one who gives first. The one who gives more than the other becomes the eternal subject.

*Untitled—San Francisco, CA 2-9-73*

**25.** The most important thing for you people to do from now on is to study the Divine Principle in depth, and then the Victory Over Communism ideology, until you have command over that—and then Unification Thought—you must master those three. Equipped with these three weapons, then you can be great leaders wherever you are.

*The Last Front-Line 2-25-73*

**26.** You should be open-minded, to learn many things from others. There are many, many things; many, many people; many, many areas. Still, I am open to learn. All the time, I concentrate on learning, studying. You will fail completely if you think, "I, the Director, am such and such—I know something." You will be out of the picture if you think that way.

**27.** You have to be open-minded; seek some things, even though sometimes you have to go to the attic or the basement—you must be constantly searching. As a spiritual leader, you should have this kind of attitude. Before you get old, why not follow the directional area—learn from experience.

**28.** This is the situation: everybody has a weak point and a strong point, so you have to get your friends, your workers, your brother or sister to supplement that area for you, then you can perfect that area. You have to serve that person; you have to love him in order for him to follow you. So that person is important to you to perfect your job; he will supplement, fill the gap of your weak point. By loving him, by working together, respecting him, that is the only way.

**29.** As a leader, you have to be a real friend at the worst time, in the most disastrous situation. You have to be a friend—at the most joyous time you have to be a friend, the saddest time, most sorrowful time, the happiest time. Then, through three categories of this instance, you really become friends; then you will win the heart of the people. Do not miss that chance.

**30.** Always you have to do more. The more you can serve the members, the better you will occupy that position. You must always treat these people with a kind and wonderful heart, and then if you are physically separated, they are attracted to you. When you are gone, they want you to come back. Even if you are separated, they want to be with you.

**31.** When you are sad, you have to project your goodness to others. When they are sad, you have to comfort them.

**32.** Always think, "I want to give, rather than be the debtor." You have to always give something. You have to carry out this kind of heart. You have to pass.

**33.** The reason why you have to eat, the reason why you have to rest and sleep is to make you more meaningful to God tomorrow. You should have that kind of concept.

**34.** Always you have to face heaven, when you feel that you have given everything, but you want to give more. If you have given all you have, you feel, "I have to give more, somewhere, someplace." Even if you have given everything, you feel ashamed because you cannot give more, because you have none-that kind of a feeling, that kind of a concept is the key. This is entirely contrary to the world's reasoning. In Satan's world, if you give somebody something, you make a big deal out of it. "Oh, I gave something." But you are ashamed now. Why? Because you have to give more, entirely a present. This kind of faith attitude, faith status is necessary for you to be leader.

**35.** As a leader and a man of responsibility...you must love God and Cain. First chapter of your diary should say, "I must love God and Cain." "I have to see the things that Cain likes before God sees them." You must first like Cain before you like or love God; that is chapter two. Then God will like you. Without Cain, God cannot come down to you. Abel should like Cain...what chapter is that? Chapter two. Third chapter is: no claim of yourself, no existence of your claim...then you have to say, "We both will die together...this is a third chapter. You have no claim at all...you are non-existent, but you say, "I will die with both." Then you will meet the True Parents; then you become one with Cain; then you will restore the True Parents. After you say we are going to die, then you meet the True Parents in chapter four, then you claim your own.

**36.** Your brain is to be used. If you do not use it, you will become dull.

*First Directors' Conference 3-5-73*

**37.** You must always be thinking of unity, unity, unity. When you smell, smell unity. Eat unity, see unity, and hear unity. Everything must be unity first, and then love and harmony, and then the ideal.

*Heart 3-30-73*

**38.** First of all, we must have a clear, strong sense of the purpose-stronger than Abraham; stronger than Moses, Noah or Adam. Ours must be greater and stronger and clearer than theirs. What can make it greater? We can say that our faith determines it; but faith can fade away along the course. God cannot trust you unless you have gone through those things for several years, until you have gone through your mission for several years at least. He wants you as leaders of groups, to be able to animate the power in the people under you. He wants you to be really dynamic, to arouse people's attention, to emit the light of love and life, and He even wants to be stimulated by you.

*Victory or Defeat 3-31-73*

39. In thinking, in speaking and in acting, don't be a tiny bit like this. Be a great, gigantic person, both in thought and action.

*True Faith 4-1-73*

40. Among the brothers and sisters, what is the responsibility of Abel? In the course of restoration, we say that the person in the position of Abel must be capable of restoring Cain. Where is the ideal place? What is the ideal point where Abel can restore Cain? In order for him to be able to restore Cain, if he is a man, he must put himself in the position of parent, or if Cain is a woman, in the position of husband toward the Cain.

41. Abel is the subject of love, so all those who are in Abel's position must always initiate the giving of love to others. In parental love, in matrimonial love, in brotherly love, always those who initiate the love, those who first give out love are in the subjective position or central position.

42. There are Cain and Abel relationships on many levels—up and down on the vertical level—side by side on the horizontal level, etc. Abel is in the position of the parents to others. Abel is in the position of God to others. So, those in the position of Abel would be full of love to give out to others. They are willing to take responsibility for other people. They are willing to take care of their brothers and sisters. If this Abel can reach out to the whole world, always taking care of them, always praying for them, always having them in his mind and remembering them in his prayer, then he is the Abel to so many people—he can be the leader to so many people. That's the measurement by which we can judge who is Abel and who is the bigger and greatest Abel.

43. Even those who are in Abel's position must be able to win Cain in order for him to be able to enter heaven.

44. Up to the present moment you have only a vague notion of how to love your Cain. You now have the clear idea of how to love your Cain. In a word, you must love your Cain as the parents would love you, and as your spouse would love you and as your brother would love you. In other words, in loving your Cain, you must give out your life and love together. You must sacrifice your own self in giving your life and your love. Unless you do that, the love cannot be returned to you.

45. In any group, the leader is in the position of your parents, or in the position of God. When the leader is in the position of God, the chief of staff is in the position of the parents, and you are in the position of their children. And among yourselves, among brothers and sisters, you must experience parental love and experience and practice matrimonial love among yourselves. That's the form of the ideal family.

The Brothers and I 4-8-73

46. To become a leader, you have to go through many difficulties. You may encounter many difficulties, and to overcome those things you must be well-trained. You have to have the confidence that you can go through and work without eating for seven days. Without such confidence and power, you cannot defeat Satan who has caused such trouble for thousands of years. Whenever you encounter great difficulties, you have to have in mind that you must go beyond this, go over this. In that case, God will help you.

47. Don't make your range short-maybe for ten or 100 years you have to have a long-range plan. We are not working for three or four years in the future. We are working to establish a ten-billion-year tradition. Therefore, you have to have that kind of long-range mind. God wants such people and wants to establish such a tradition. So, I ask you to have strong confidence.

*Untitled Address On Training Plans 5-7-73*

48. You must never dream of being a failure.

*Significance of the Training Session 5-17-73*

49. Any leader of any group in any center; try to avoid the situation of a man alone with a woman. You must be there—at least one man and two women, or two men and one woman. Eve fell because she was alone with the Archangel. When Eve fell with Adam the same was true. When there was God, Eve, Adam and the Archangel—then the fallen act could not have been committed. If one male and one female are alone by themselves, isn't there the possibility of their committing the mistake?

*Relationship Between Men and Women 5-20-73*

50. In order for one to become a great leader, he has to go through many difficulties—and with desperate effort must persevere through trials and be ready to face still more.

*Mind the Environment in Advancing Forward 5-25-73*

51. The law of indemnity would tell you that if you doze off when the lecturer is giving his lecture, then when you give the lecture, many people will doze off. How do you like that idea? When the water is muddy upstream, the water downstream must be muddy, too. So, if you as the leader would have that kind of laxness, your members will be influenced like that.

**52.** The quality of leadership is very simple: you want to give out unconditionally, or at least give out more than the person will give you. Then he would feel like coming back to you with more things. Then, when other people don't mind about him and are sympathetic to him, then you look for the loneliest person and try to warm his heart. You would sit up the whole night forgetting to sleep and eat because of that person. Don't ever tell the persons who are in need of you that, "This is my breakfast time, and I am sorry that I have only five minutes to talk with you." Know how to grasp the time and think, "For this person, this is the only moment I can give him life, or he will die." You must feel that kind of urgency.

*After Lecture 5-26-73*

**53.** Our eyes have been seeing things in the wrong way, so we must deny all that we have seen and look at things from new and different angles. Our ears, too, have been hearing only things that will benefit us as individuals, so we must deny all those things and hear things from new and different angles. Our tongues have been saying things in defense of ourselves as individuals, but we must revolutionize our way of thinking and think in terms of other people. Our way of acting for the benefit of ourselves alone must be corrected, too. Only by revolutionizing all those things in ourselves can we become the central figures important to others.

**54.** If you are going to be the central figure or leader of a number of people, you must serve them rather than be served by them. You must train yourself to work hard and give credit to other people before being able to have many people under you or around you.

**55.** The amount of time you have spent with a person and worked with a person will decide how close he is to you.

*Important Person 6-10-73*

**56.** You have to re-evaluate and re-locate yourself at a different level. So, you have to pledge yourself, swear yourself and your life with determination as a Commander, as a State Representative, as a Church Center Director, you have to make a new commitment. Until you fulfill your promised pledge, you have no room for complaint, no time for that. Because you are resting and doing something else, you cannot accomplish your mission. If you cannot accomplish things the first time, try twice or a third time. There is no room for failure if you do it this way. Under these circumstances we cannot think that it is too hard for us to carry out. So, you should pledge your life first in front of God, to do your mission, in this serious setting.

*Opening Talk—Morning Session 7-4-73*

**57.** You have to build up, serve people first, gradually win them, and win their respect instead of from the beginning bossing everybody around. It doesn't work that way. You must first serve them; then you build the foundation.

**58.** Victory does not come from the office plan—victory comes from the actual situation, your conduct in the actual battlefield. Victory comes there, not from theory. Especially in spiritual work effort should be applied. The victory will come in the front-line, not from your plan. So, you should be stand working hard at the front.' Those who have been doing this, raise your hands. I myself have stood in front until a firm foundation was set up. So, you have to do the same thing.

**59.** As a leader, you are not supposed to be a burden to your members.

**60.** You have to pray after all your members have gone to bed. Alone, you have to pray for them.

**61.** You should know every day about each of your members—in the early morning—you have to know the conditions of their minds, their spiritual condition. If you feel through your knowledge that there is a need for spiritual counseling, you have to say what's wrong with them. This is the parental role you have to take.

**62.** When you raise spiritual children, your members, this is not office work. Raising them is a spiritual matter, it is not office work. You are dealing with souls, you are dealing with children. Sometimes the baby becomes sick, and you have to take care of him. So, if your baby is crying, you can't say, "I can't come. This is my office time." You cannot neglect your baby because you are in the office. You can't do that. Twenty-four hours you are obligated to this group; so, you had better stand and work in the front.

**63.** You cannot be lazy—you have to be alert.

**64.** When the other members perspire, sweat, you have to do the same thing. When they cry, you have to cry together. When they are full of tears of sorrow, you have to be the same way. If one of your members does not sleep, you have to stay up with him—this is his life. So, if you do not do that every night before you go to bed, you have to repent for whatever you were unable to do. You have to feel guilty and repent of it; otherwise, you are in trouble. This is the tradition on which the Unification Church was founded.

**65.** If you are in a leader's position, it means that you are already in a dangerous position. Anytime you are wrong against the Principle, if you violate the law and commit a sin, you are dead bodies; there are coffins ready to swallow you. This is dangerous. You are in a position such that, anytime you go wrong, you will be put in a coffin. The leader's position is the most serious position. In influencing or destroying God's dispensation, you are standing in an initial position. So that is why you have got to be serious. If you make a mistake, you get the feeling that you are going to

the scaffold, in the judgment seat. When you are successful, you get the feeling of going to a marriage ceremony, going to the Master. This is your situation.

*Evening Address—Direction to Leaders 7-4-73*

**66.** A "leader" means a central figure. If you are in the center playing the role of the central figure, you must not be inclined to one side or the other. The central figure will decide the balance of all those placed in different directions. In order for you to be able to keep that balance, you as the central figure must stand up straight and balanced yourself. You must be like an upright tree. If the trunk is straight, the branches extending to every direction will be well-balanced. And the roots are also affected. So, in a word, you must not be inclined to just one side; you must keep good balance.

**67.** You will be getting information from all directions, and you must not be too attentive to one side neglecting what is coming from the other side. You must be good listeners, and you must be able to analyze and criticize in the best way.

**68.** First of all, you must be good listeners so that you can judge correctly. Those who are under your leadership will live or die dependent upon one word coming from you.

**69.** In order for you to be entitled to scold the people under you once, you must appreciate ten things they are doing right, and then point out two or three things they have been lacking. If you just strike them for what they have not done right, they will be broken.

**70.** The problem is how, for instance, with twenty people under you, you're relied upon and trusted. In order for you to be liked or loved by them, you must love them first of all.

**71.** You are apt to dwell on your authority as the leader. However, the authority of the leader must not be set up by you yourself, but by those people under you. If you think of yourself as powerful and authoritative, that is not the right feeling. You must rely on others, your members, and it is they who must think of you as a powerful leader, an authoritative leader.

**72.** Your utterances, your heart, your acts—there must not be a difference between what you say and what you do. In speaking, too, you must not speak of two things at the same time. You must not be saying two things different from each other, or opposite to each other. So those three—heart, action, and words—must be in accordance with each other.

**73.** What you are instructed by the central figure, or your leader, will be something like in the case of Noah when he was told by God to build the ark. You receive the message from me, and you convey it to your members, but if you don't act it out, the words will be valueless.



**74.** I have gone through many speeches by now, so I know the contents by heart. But the most difficult and important problem is how to be one with my words and how to be one with God in heart. And I want to be truthful in uttering the words, and when I do that, my spirit goes out to the audience, projecting that spirit to the hearts of the people. Nothing will result or come into being without a cause. You must be enthusiastic, you must be full of heart in giving words to the people, or else your words cannot move their hearts. You will see how important your words are.

**75.** If the listeners are attentive to what you say and absorb your words, it will change their lives. And if they fail to receive these words they are destined to hell. It is a grave matter. You must be responsible about what you say. If you don't have God standing before you, whatever you say will be a failure. If you have God standing before you, then you as the instrument will be the spokesman through whom God can speak.

**76.** If you as the leader speak out, and you forget about your being the instrument through whom God is speaking, then what you say will sometimes be fruitful, but mostly it will not be fruitful. And in that case, those who fail to receive the words will accuse you of your mistakes to eternity. If you are like that, however hard you may struggle to win members, you will fail to win them. And even though you win the members, they will fall away easily. So, you leaders are in the position to be judged first.

**77.** I speak every evening, but my feeling before going out onto the stage is that of a criminal before being executed. I am that serious every time. I feel so grave because I know that multitudes of lives will depend on me. If I am God-centered, and God is with me, and myriads of saints are helping me out, then I speak fluently. And not only do I speak fluently, but what I say will be fruitful in the hearts of the people. If not, then not only that audience present at the meeting, but their descendants also, will accuse me of my failure.

**78.** If you, as the leaders, are notable to carry out your mission, your descendants will be affected, too. So you are in a dreadful position. It is something like you're walking on roller blades. That is the position of the leaders.

**79.** You must love and care for your members, and day and night you must be thinking of them, praying for them, and seeking to nurture them. God is the Center. And in leading the people, you are in the position of the center. Then the person in the center must be giving out all the time. You must invest your whole being one hundred percent, and then you can expect a good outcome. Without giving to them, you cannot expect any crops from the people.

**80.** You may be without a penny. You may not have material things to give them, but you have heart. By giving your heart, you are not going to lose anything.

**81.** You must always be conscious of your living for the members under you. So if you are given rich things to eat, you must be thinking of your members first; and if you have good things

to put on, you must be thinking of them first; and if you have a good place to sleep, you must be thinking of your members first.

**82.** After having long been a leader, you are apt to criticize people without your carrying out your own mission. You will easily order other people to do something, but you will not do things yourself. My philosophy is to do things myself, and then let others do them. The principle is simple: you sleep in a humbler place, you eat poorer things, and you wear poorer clothing. Leaders will have many opportunities to appear in public scenes, so your members will be considerate and have you put on good clothing and look nice, and that is what your members should do for you, not you for yourself.

**83.** Even in case what you are doing is successful, you must not be boastful of your being successful, because the success did not come because of you, but because of your members. You must be thankful to God and to the members for their cooperation. Without that notion in your mind, you cannot progress.

**84.** If you as the leader find yourself being indebted to the members, you must retreat from that position—that is far better. If you go on like that in the same role, then God will strike you. You will be a failure, and you will feel disgraced before the members. You must really experience all those things. And you know too well whether or not you are indebted to the members, don't you? If you are indebted to members, you must repay it. That is why you must be running in the vanguard of all the rest of your family, and you must work harder than they, and you must have poorer things to enjoy. You cannot go on all by yourself, so you must get the cooperative power pushing you ahead.

**85.** In the Bible we read, "Love your God with all your might, all your sincerity, all your soul. There is no commandment excelling that." It sounds simple. Whether you are indebted to others or have them indebted to you will decide your success or failure. First of all, you as the leader must give your members words. And you must next show them the way. Then you must exemplify how to live, how to live the words, the truth.

**86.** You must have your members always feeling like jotting down what you say. What you say should be so important to them that they feel like writing it down. You must be able to get the cooperation from your members because you are working so hard that they feel like helping you all the way. And you must have your members follow your example because they feel you are always acting out what you say.

**87.** The way I instruct my members is always this: when you are given gifts, don't touch it, and think it over, because you are apt to be not qualified enough to have that. In case you use it and take it for granted, then it is poisonous to you. If the person who is giving you the gift has poured out one hundred percent sincerity and love there, and you receive it with ten percent of that person's love, then the rest of the ninety percent will accuse you, and the heavenly fortune coming to you

will retreat from you. When you are given a gift, you must offer it, dedicate it to God first, and be given from Him.

**88.** Without cause, there will be no result. You as the cause must be powerful in order to influence the people. You are in the position of the subject. You are in the position of the center. And you must be all-zealous to carry out your mission.

**89.** Wherever you are, wherever you go, you must be with God. You must have your God stand before you and follow Him.

**90.** If you have new members, you must be praying hard for them, and then you will be given visions and dreams about them. And the next day you can tell them that they have such and such disadvantages, and things like that, and they will be awakened to the fact. Many times you will be able to predict things, and when you point out the fact that a person is thinking this or that in his heart, that person would be astonished and would ask you, "How do you know?" "When I prayed, I saw it." And he will be thankful that you are so concerned about him and take such care of him. In light of all these things, you must judge your own selves.

**91.** If you find a certain member, a certain element causing disharmony among the group, you must have the heart of a father and call the person in secret and take him out to one of the restaurants or one of the theaters. After giving him something good, then you must talk with him and discuss the matter. Then he will come to like you, he will come to love you, and you are in the position of the parents. And wouldn't your children want to follow you wherever you go? You must create that kind of atmosphere in your family. You must be able to create that kind of feeling in the hearts of your members, so that they will like you from the bottom of their heart, and serve you from the bottom of their heart.

**92.** You must share the difficulties of your members, and you must console their hearts when they are in trouble. And you must encourage them, without giving them commands and scolding them or punishing them when they fail to do something.

**93.** Creation is to invest your whole energy and whole being in those in the object position.

**94.** You must take care of them as you would your own children. In the night when you wake up, you must look around and cover them with blankets if they are naked. You should be nurturing them as carefully as though they were plants, using fertilizer or nourishments, and watering the plants. If you are not doing that, they will not grow properly. For seven years of our movement, I wouldn't sleep at night. I would sit up the whole night nurturing the members and giving them truth to raise them. I wanted to sleep; I was tired. Still, I wouldn't. So many times I had a bleeding nose from exhaustion. Still, I would just talk on and on. My eyes would be reddened, and I could not look up at the sun in full day light.

**95.** If there is God at all, He could not but be sympathetic with me. From our surroundings would come persecution; and in the tribulation and hardships, I was so many times imprisoned. And in the midst of all those difficulties, I would just think of the members and pray for them. What do you call it: when you are too tired, there is a sore that comes out on your tongue? (Canker sores, sores on your tongue.) I had sores on my tongue. You just don't know what I went through in those days. Because I had such an attitude and made such efforts, even the newcomers, when they came, would just weep before me. Sobbing, they would confess what they had gone through in their past.

**96.** It is no coincidence that your members are under you, and in the background, there is historical power working and their ancestry working. If you fail to nurture them and make them solid members, then if they fall back, the whole ancestry of those people will accuse you.

**97.** Those who are in the leader's position must play the role of servants to the rest of your family. Think of your own parents; they served you all the way. If you fail to do that as a leader, putting yourself in the position of parents, you cannot go on taking the job. But if you are a parent to them, you cannot but have your members increase.

**98.** During the first seven-year course, I would not wear this kind of suit. I wore just a shirt for several years, and then I would wear a sport jacket. And it is only some ten years ago that I began to wear the gentlemen's suits. I wanted to experience the hearts of the laborers by myself being in that position; and I wanted to experience the hearts of the middle-class people and the upper-class people by myself experiencing those same things.

**99.** In those days, I would wear Korean "paji," Korean trousers, and then an American G. I. suit. And I didn't have a pair of shoes; they were not mates. My way of living was lower than pigs. In that situation, I prayed in tears for the presidents and top-level people. Through my prayers, I would have them indebted to me. And they are in the position to repay me. If they don't repay me, heaven will snatch away what they have and give it to us. I was not anxious to elevate my standard of living, but God would have me do that.

**100.** Leaders are in a dreadful position. After scolding or punishing one of your members, you must sit up the whole night praying for that person in order for that person not to get hurt. And then the next morning he will wake up feeling gratefulness to you. To raise one member is more difficult than raising three children of your own. It is such a difficult job. You must live and die together or die in advance of that person.

**101.** You must be aware of the fact that you are leading myriads of armies forward to the front-line, and you cannot sleep easily. You must be responsible over all these people in making decisions. In commanding the people under you, you must be very careful and very alert.

**102.** You must speak the truth, act out the truth and live it.

**103.** The conclusion is: don't get indebted to other people. If you are indebted to others, you must really bow down your heads before them.

**104.** In other words, those who are in leaders' positions are in dreadful positions, and in responsible positions. In other words, you are in a position to be pitied and sympathized with, and you will be loved by God. You will be respected by the people, by your ancestors and by your descendants in later days.

*On Leadership 11-9-73*

**105.** If I'm not one with God and you are strictly obedient to my command, then God will either kill me or just remove me from this position.

*God's Day Eve 12-31-73*

**106.** To come to the original point, you must realize that with yourself in the center you must elevate your past—inherit your past. You must fix your purpose in accordance with the mainstream of history or God's will. If you are posted as the center leader, you already inherit what your predecessors have done. Then you must lead the group in the right direction, and that's the mission ahead of you. Do you follow me?

**107.** There is God's will, the great purpose, and you are where you are by inheriting the past, or what your predecessors have done. You are here, and with your members you are going to go ahead, expanding your movement. Your direction must be in accordance with God's will in history. You must realize you are right in the center and your position is the most important and critical. You must deny yourself. You must not think of yourself but of the members and of future movement of the center. And these must go in accordance with God's greater will.

**108.** Let us define what a true leader is. The true leader is the one who denies himself for others; one who sacrifices himself to raise the whole family in a wholesome way. Then he, with them, can expand the movement to include more and more of the population for which he is responsible and connect that to larger goals. If you do that, you are actually teaching your members.

**109.** Those who are at the central point play the main role but sacrifice themselves to make the whole circle whirl around them. Then the whole thing will come into a harmonized oneness, and the next circle will do the same. The leader, as the center, pulls or turns the whole thing with himself as the axis.

**110.** In proportion to the sacrifice you have made, you are going to be a greater or lesser leader.

**111.** Those who sacrifice themselves will be the leaders responsible for many people under them, able to control or influence them. That's the principle of the thing.

**112.** You are doing things on behalf of God, so you must know what God has in mind—what God would have you do. You must not be doing things at random. You must realize what God's will is, what God's will is for this time, and what our whole purpose is, centered on God. In doing things in place of God we must have our minds and hearts in accordance with God.

**113.** You are with God, acting out things in place of, or on behalf of God. This is the position you are in. If you deeply realize this, you will know where you are going. By this time, I think you know what God's will is. First of all, we must perfect ourselves on the individual level; then we must perfect our families, or perfect God's will on the family level. Then follows the clan, national and worldwide level of perfection.

**114.** We have dual purposes. For instance, you are sent out as a center leader and that's your duty, but the duty you are carrying out must be accomplished in accordance with God's will. You must remember that the dual purposes should be in harmony. It is the destiny of any individual to go through these stages: individual, family, clan, national and worldwide level. Especially, religious leaders are in a position to lead people through these stages.

**115.** In order for you to place yourself in this position, you must gain each level in accordance with God's will, always with dual purpose. You as an individual must gain more and more, conforming to God's will.

**116.** In order for you to be elevated to higher and higher stages, you must go through your leaders. There is no other way possible. This straight way is mainstream of our thought. If you are in this stage, you must manipulate those under you, but you must be manipulated or guided by the leader above you. You must be victorious over all these things in order for you to be qualified enough to be a leader. There is no other way possible for you to climb through these stages. This is the straight word—the ladder on which you must climb to acquire the height, the very summit.

*Central Figure 2-13-74*

**117.** If you want to become a great leader, you must have one of three qualifications. First, you must be a good speaker. You must express yourself well. Second, you must be a good public relations man, presenting a good image to the public. You must be a good diplomat. Third, you must make money for the restoration work.

**118.** When I look at the many different personalities gathered here, I can look at a particular individual and know you are parallel to a certain type of person. Then I recall a particular

experience I have had in dealing with that type of person. That experience comes alive and works in my dealing with you. If you find someone very sorrowful and distressed, then you go back to your wealth of experiences and pick out an experience in which you also felt that rock-bottom sorrow and distress. Make that experience alive in your own heart. Then you become a real friend of that sorrowful person. You can encourage him. I want you to have all kinds of experiences. More than anything else, I want you to taste rejection. God has been experiencing rejection for so many years. When you go out to win money, do not expect that every person you ask will give money. In some cases, your hand may be slapped, and people may almost spit at you. Sometimes you may even be slapped in the face. Sometimes you may be knocked to the ground with a bleeding nose. That is tragic, because you are not acting selfishly. But the tragic experiences in the future will be a brilliant part of your history in the record of your accomplishment. After you experience suffering, and are working with thousands of people, you know something about each one. You can speak from the real depths of your experience. Then people will respect, adore, and follow you. Therefore, every day you are gathering your own treasure. Though it is invisible, you are gathering your own bag of treasure, and it is getting heavier and larger every day.

*Parents' Day 3-24-74*

**119.** A person who is responsible over others must have a certain capacity. He must have not only the power or capacity to take responsibility, but also the power to cause things to develop.

**120.** He must be efficient and capable, and he needs strong leadership ability, then he can cause his people and his organization to grow.

**121.** His ability cannot be perfected in an instant, but he must have much experience.

**122.** Unless what you have is better than what others have, you cannot be responsible for others.

**123.** You must learn from predecessors or from those who are experienced in the field. You must learn good points from the leaders. For instance, if there are ten leaders, you must learn from all of them. Suppose you have ten such leaders or one hundred such leaders, you must absorb what they have that is good and you discard what they have that is bad. In such a way you should learn.

**124.** You can either analyze or criticize other people only if and when you have the same capability or experience.

**125.** Before anything else, you must have the inherent capability of having those people believe you or trust you, so that they will give you the knack of the things or the secret that they have learned.

**126.** In order for you to be a leader, you must have the ability to organize, but more than anything else, you must be the person who is the center of love.

**127.** In order for you to become responsible leaders, you must be equipped with external qualities, of course, but then the next thing, or the most important thing to come to know is how to love them, how to lead them in love.

**128.** People need a leader over them who is responsible for them and who will take care of them. So they want to believe that the leader is for them, and that the leader loves them. These qualities are indispensable for a leader, a genuine leader.

**129.** However hard you may struggle to be a good leader and give out your love and your whole being to the people, sometimes they not only betray you, but they would try to use you. When the leader's love towards his people is self-centered, and if he calculates on what's coming as the reward, he is apt to be discouraged at the moment when he is faced with rebuff, and then think that he is not for these people and he will retreat from his position.

**130.** As a spiritual leader, you must not be satisfied with their response, and even though your group is happy for the time being, you must add more things and try to make them happier and still happier.

**131.** The greatest of all the spiritual leaders is God.

**132.** Do you imagine that the great spiritual leaders of the world always feel happiness in their hearts? If you can get them to be really frank to you, they are always distressed, they always are unhappy or miserable. It is because a spiritual leader always has to give away what he has, always be giving. He has to deal with so many types of people all the time, and if he cannot give things out to them, in that case his love must not be one-sided, and his love has to be fulfilling to every kind of person. There are all kinds of people, and if they cannot feel contented or satisfied, what would he do?

**133.** I must again say that leaders must trust people for the sake of them and sacrifice for the sake of those people, and love for the sake of those people not for themselves.

**134.** When you are a leader, you are the central figure, and being the central figure means your bearing is right in the middle and you don't put more stress on certain people, and you are not favoring certain people over others.

**135.** In order for you to be able to move other people, manipulate the people, you must lose yourself or deny yourself. What you eat, where you live, and what you wear must be well balanced with others.



**136.** If and when you are a leader, if you feel easy and not out-going, not standing in the vanguard of others, then you can safely say that you are losing the quality of a leader.

**137.** How to lose yourself, how to deny yourself is the first question that comes, and you know that you have the strong "I" conception. If you have too strong a personality, you must try to erase that. If your personality is etched, you must scrape it out or rub it in such a way that your personality will be rounded. As a leader you cannot say, "My principle is to sleep eight hours a day." You cannot say, "I cannot go on without eating three meals." You cannot say, "I must be treated well and they must respect me." You cannot ever dream of being that kind of person as a leader.

**138.** If you are the leader over so many people, if you think of things in the self-centered way, never thinking of the public, then just wait and see—you will lose the quality of the leader and people won't respect you. You may be so clever as to be able to cheat them and pretend as though you are a great leader, and that may pass in the outside world, but in the spiritual movement that cannot be accepted. The spiritual world will work in the group, and the people will lose trust in you, and they will somehow feel like disliking you.

**139.** You must be able to find yourself being always anxious to do more things, and you cannot just sit with folded arms and with easy heart, but you feel like working more than your people and for the people, and then people will respect you and you will be strong leaders. You can cultivate more leadership.

**140.** I can safely define that when you are a leader over 100 people, you are and you must be the most wretched and unhappy and miserable person of them all. If you are responsible over 1,000 people, you must be the most miserable one of them all.

**141.** The leader's life must be that of great faith and deep faith.

**142.** In the face of great difficulties, you must be able to get the willing cooperation of other people and respect and trust from other people.

**143.** All things considered; the leader's position is the most difficult one. His is a position of weakness and helplessness. But when you are weak or helpless for the sake of others you are safe. You will be aided by the vast spirit world, and you will have many deep spiritual experiences which will strengthen you. If you are ready to receive spiritual cooperation from above, then you, by going through those kinds of experiences, you will find yourself successful as a leader because you have cooperation from the spirit side.

**144.** When you pray to God, you cannot be boastful of your title of leader, by saying, "Oh God, I am the leader of such and such a group. Please do this for me." That kind of prayer cannot be heard by God. You must be able to put yourself in the position of children crying to God, calling

for help, and denying yourself. You have no "yourself" there, but you should just rely on God, seeing Him as the only existence in the world, then you are sure to be answered.

**145.** Leaders on the external level, or on the worldly level, think that their role is to give commands to other people. But for the internal leaders (what he means is spiritual leaders) things are otherwise. Your responsibilities will be assigned when you are able to put yourself in the position to be given orders, and to obey and fulfill others' needs.

**146.** Spiritual leaders must go beyond the limits of time considerations and must be able to deal with people at any moment of need. Even though you have to sacrifice your sleeping hours, you must be ready to help others. You must not think of your meal hours as fixed. You must cultivate the attitude that every moment of your life is for other people. If you have that kind of attitude as a leader and put it into practice, you will be a good or successful leader.

**147.** When you look at bad points in other people or bad things being done in your group, don't be too impatient and too quick in judging people or doing away with or disposing of them. But

wait, and you encourage good points in the people and good things that are being done there, and then reserve your judgment to the end, and you must hope that that person will correct his mistake. It is very likely that you will find a person doing wonderfully, but if you had cut him off years ago he wouldn't be there, and he would almost rebel against you, but he is now doing a good job after having repented and corrected his mistake on his own.

**148.** Your home will be a public place.

**149.** When the visitors urgently need you, you must see them. At that moment you are really for those people and not for your wife. So, you must look as though you love those people more than your wife. And the leader would like to sell whatever his wife has that is good and use it for needy people. And then what will become of his home? If the wife were not understanding a rupture might occur in that family.

**150.** If the people close to you say things for your sake, and they love you and sacrifice for you, you would tell them, "Sacrifice for the people whom I want to sacrifice for and love the people whom I love."

**151.** You must use your whole being for the sake of others. You must re-evaluate yourself to know if your eyes have not been misused and have been used for the sake of others, and likewise with your ears, your nose, your mouth, your limbs. All things, when they have been used for the sake of other people, will make you a success.

**152.** Before your becoming a responsible leader over 1,000 people, you must train yourself to be a good leader over one individual. You must ask yourself, "Do I have one person who can really believe in me, who can really rely on me, and who can really look up to me as a leader or teacher?"

**153.** If you are going to be a perfect leader over one individual, then you must be responsible over his well-being, including criticism of his bad points and uplifting and encouraging his good points. You cannot just say, "I am responsible over your good points but not over your bad points," but you must be responsible over the whole person of that individual. What makes you separated from him or divided from him is always the bad point, not the good point. So you must be able to encompass and be responsible over the bad points as well as the good ones. You must be able to help him eliminate his bad points, then he will be a good person, helpful to you.

**154.** If you are a good leader in your family, there is no problem for you to be the leader of your church. In that case, you must think of the church members as though they are your own family members and be ready to take the responsibility over whatever shortcomings they have; then they can rely on you.

**155.** We have such a vast job ahead of us. In order for us to be qualified enough to do that, we must be able first to trust them and to sacrifice ourselves for the sake of those people and be ready to love them as though we would our own people. First is trust, second is serve, next is love, and last is sacrifice—trust, serve, love and sacrifice for them. There is no other way possible for us to win over them. Do you like the idea? (Yes.) You must readily accept those things. You must be able to trust them while they don't act kindly. You must be able to serve them. You must be able to love them and sacrifice for them. And that you must do out of your heart, from the bottom of your heart. Can you do that? What do you think God would do, in what manner? Have you ever stopped to think of that? Even for God, it is a most difficult job.

**156.** When you can trust a person while he is not trustworthy, when you can serve a person when he is not worthy, when you can love those people when they are not lovable, and when you can sacrifice yourself for the sake of those people when they are not worth sacrificing for, you are qualified as a responsible person. Unless you can do that, you are not qualified.

**157.** Steadfast endeavor and persevering efforts will make you into experts.

*Becoming a Responsible Person 7-14-74*

**158.** The criterion of a great leader is that he or she should possess some superior element. The goal of the individual is clear: he needs systematic action, the ability to analyze and observe the environment, and at the same time, supervise and control that environment. That is a leader.

*To Belvedere Trainees 8-29-74*

**159.** To save the nation, to save the whole world, this person who worries about God's nation is the practitioner, the realizer, not the dreamer. The person of this category should not be able to stand seeing what's going on, even at the state and local level, the evil sovereignty. He is the person who stands out ready to fight. You have to fight.

*The Person Who Worries About God's Nation 9-1-74*

**160.** Become a public person. Do not harbor personal ambition. Let us be greedy for the ideal, for the sake of everybody. Be unselfish, that's the key. Let us be humble and let us be meek. We must not be boastful. We must be humble and meek in front of everyone. When you walk this path there are many times you come to a moment when it is very difficult to judge which way is the right one. Sometimes confusion prevails. Then what is the solution to finding the right way? In that particular moment of confusion be humble and have an unselfish mind. If from that point of view, you look at the situation, then your course of action is very clear, obviously you put yourself on a horizontal level. Worry about your objective, not yourself, and pray to God.

*Let Us Turn This Historical Moment Into Great Victory 9-8-74*

**161.** Those who are in responsible positions as leaders, always keep alert. Belittle yourself and exalt God and you will be safe. If you are arrogant, or if you feel like a victor, then you are apt to be attacked by Satan.

**162.** A man in the leadership position must have zeal, energy and confidence.

*Let Us Cross Over the Hill 9-29-74*

**163.** A good Abel is faithful, dutiful and loyal to the utmost degree. You must become a central figure in the environment where you are situated, feeling that you yourself are responsible to restore those surroundings to the heavenly side.

**164.** Those who do not like people are not qualified to become good religious leaders.

*Let Us Establish the Kingdom of Heaven 1-1-75*

**165.** There are four qualifications for leaders of our church. The first is that we must have total dedication. The second is complete purity and integrity. The third is to perfect our ability and the fourth is great accomplishment.

*New York Church Director's Meeting 3-5-75*

**166.** If as a leader, you want to take responsibility for the people, for the good they have done, you are against God, or you are going farther and farther from God. But if you are ready to take responsibility for the people for the evil they have done, then you are coming closer and closer to God. That's why I am saying that this is the shortest cut to reach God.

*Human Relationships 3-9-75*

**167.** In case of difficulties, you must always be thinking of how to raise a leader from that nation in order to succeed in your mission.

**168.** If you find yourself not able to survive the situation, be wise enough to raise a leader out of that people as soon as possible.

**169.** Don't ever dream of using the people of the land, just ordering them to do this and that for you or using them as your servants. Never think of that; instead, you must become the servant to them. Just drive yourself into the soil like a seed, go through the difficulties, and make another breakthrough to grow in that land, in that climate.

**170.** You must find ways to open the hearts of other people by giving good lectures which will move their hearts; you must know how to raise money in that country to stand on your own economically; and you must be able to do good public relations work so that you can open up the channel to reach out to the people there.

*Those Who Will Prevail 3-12-75*

**171.** You must be as humble as possible, serve your members, and raise them as you would your own children, taking care of them, loving them all the time.

**172.** A leader is not a person who can give orders to people below him, but one who can serve them, be exemplary to them, and smooth the way for them. That is the qualification of Abel.

*Cain-Abel Relationships 3-15-75*

**173.** As a leader, whenever you open your door, you have to feel, "I have to see my family, I long for my family!" If you have this kind of heart, you will have the power of love. Then people will come to you. When you reach that stage, as a leader you know what's going on in individuals. You may even receive revelations. If you reach that stage you know what is on people's minds. That's the kind of Unification leader Heavenly Father wants to have in our movement. Do you think you have reached that stage? If not, you are not qualified to be a Unification Church leader.

*Directives to Foreign Missionaries 3-20-75*

**174.** Unlike other religious leaders, instead of meditating and meditating, I'm an activist, always acting and putting my theory into practice, even moving God.

*Who Will Be Responsible for the Providence of God? 3-23-75*

**175.** If you are a good leader, you must have others miss you and long to see you. If other people would upon looking at you think, "Oh! Why is he or she here again!" If they want to escape from you, then you are not a good leader.

*To Foreign Missionaries 4-19-75*

**176.** Everyone must have a clear view of his purpose. You must know what that purpose really means, and you must be able to organize yourself to reach it. Our purpose is to establish the earthly Kingdom of God, to carry out the will of God. You must be able to explain what that means: in order to establish the Kingdom of God you must do this and that. You must be headed toward the goal and march forward. You must be able to organize yourself and pave the way. To do that, we need manpower and finances. You have a clear goal ahead of you, but without increasing your own membership, you cannot organize your own system, yet in order for you to be able to go ahead until you attain the goal, you need money. So, those three elements are most needed. Then you can do things on behalf of the True Parents and in place of God.

**177.** In running a company, too, you must have a clear goal, you must have manpower, you must be able to explain the purpose to those people, and you must have financial strength.

**178.** Government must have a policy—its goal. They must have manpower to run the government; they must be able to lead the people by giving them a clear picture of the contents of what they are going to do, and they must have financial stability. The government must be able to

explain the goal by being able to convince the Senators and Congressmen and all the people of the nation.

**179.** As a leader, if you are lacking in one of these areas, you will cause a minus there. If you have to get money from others, you may have to concede something. If you lack manpower, in order to get manpower, you must sacrifice a portion of what you have and in that way you will cause a minus; what you have left will be less than what you want. If you don't know how to educate people about what you are going to do, then they will be wiser than you. Your area of domination will be lessened.

**180.** Those who have only a narrow area of knowledge can be good followers, but not good leaders. I want you to be future leaders. It is no easy job to become a leader. You must know how to raise money and how to win members.

**181.** You are going to work in place of God, so you must have a goal and be able to explain it.

**182.** You must be able to educate people.

**183.** You must understand the heart of God in restoring His children and all things because restoration is even more difficult than creation.

**184.** Like a heartbeat, God will never cease to work in this world through you. So, you must never cease to work; without sleep, without food, you have to struggle on to win the people, win money, develop the ability to educate people.

*Training for Victory 10-2-75*

**185.** To win God's approval to drive others, a leader must work far harder than those he drives and prove himself worthy.

*Perfection and Gratitude 10-3-76*

**186.** Unless you have harmonious relationships with people, your position will not be stable. If you are supported by people all around, then you will stand straight up, instead of leaning to one side.

*To Whom Do I Belong 1-16-77*

**187.** The more you serve the more you become the central, subjective figure.

*Who Was I 3-13-77*

**188.** You know very clearly that as a fundraising team leader your members will all resemble you. You have to clearly show them the way because unless you show them, they will never learn.

**189.** Do you know who the best team leader is? I want each one of you to think all the time about who is the best leader and then pay close attention to him so that you can learn from him. You should ask him what he does to be the best team leader.

**190.** If 74 people fundraise, they will use 74 different methods; however, there is only one best way out of the 74. When someone is the best then everyone should learn his way. Those who have no idea who is the best can never be the best themselves.

**191.** The way to improve yourself is to follow the example of the most successful man.

**192.** The first criterion of leadership is organization; you have to organize efficiently. Second, you must always have a sense of responsibility for your own team, and in addition you have to teach each of your team members to have a sense of responsibility. After you have done these three things then check how intensely you work. At that point your enthusiasm and long hours of work will mean everything. You will succeed when you have all of these.

**193.** You have to standardize your method of doing things. You must have a clear idea of what you are going to do, and all your members must know what they are going to do. If any of them has a better way of doing things, of course let him suggest it. Organization, a strong sense of responsibility, enthusiasm and long hours of work are all very essential, but there is still one more crucial element: clear direction.

**194.** The fastest, easiest way to find the best method is to adopt the best man's technique for yourself.

**195.** When you move into an unfamiliar area, you must first analyze the situation. When you think you know the best way, then put it into practice.

**196.** Our planning and organization must be workable, not just idealistic.

**197.** It is good if you have a sense of responsibility yourself, but it will not accomplish anything until all your members also have that same sense of responsibility. Your problem is how to transfer your standard to them. You have to study this process all the time.



**198.** Just because a baby cannot run the moment he is born we certainly cannot say that he will never run. We have to give a person a chance to improve himself and explain many things to him so that he will feel a sense of responsibility. In the beginning you may have to carry him along, not on your back, but by working with him side by side for two days, teaching him how to do everything. Do you ever think in that way? Unless you feel that, you will just be using the people on your team, and after they finish working with you, they will go downhill spiritually. You cannot borrow a person from another area or from other people and just expect him to work. You have to love and feed him, care for him in every way; then he will work wholeheartedly with you.

**199.** Who is a man of responsibility? He is the one who is determined to make his followers also men of responsibility. A false leader is always saying, "Do this and do that," but never does those things himself. He never works. The man of responsibility, the frontline leader, should always work harder and better than other people, then they will follow him. If you live that way yourself then you will not have to tell your members to follow you; they will want to follow you on their own.

**200.** Perhaps you have lots of enthusiasm and your members are inspired to work very hard, but if they get very little result they will stop working. You have to be smart as well as enthusiastic.

**201.** One good quality in a leader is not enough. You have to be good at everything.

**202.** The first necessity is organization, the second is a sense of responsibility and the third is knowing how to put these into practice. In carrying these out you must first have enthusiasm.

**203.** Being winners will be relatively easy. The way to do it is to put in more hours and have more enthusiasm than others, plus excellent organization, and a sense of responsibility.

**204.** If you have put in longer hours and been more enthusiastic than other people, but were still unsuccessful, then there's only one explanation: your method is wrong. This is the one thing that you must always be wanting to learn; I am always thinking about that also. If you seek out the best method all the time, then in two or three years you will have much experience and you can become the top man.

**205.** We do our best when we are competing with each other in a good sense. Do you have that sense of competition?

**206.** Let your members give suggestions about the best method to use and give comments about themselves. If you are confident of having the best way, do not just insist that your members follow your way. If one of them comes up to suggest his own idea, even if you think he is wrong, do not say, "No, just hush up and listen to me." Rather, try to find the good points in his suggestion and agree with him on those. If you come to realize that someone is actually better than you in some ways, then you can always accept suggestions from him. You need to have vast information.

**207.** The man who is closest to the Principle should always bring in the better result, but even a genius may go up and down. If you notice in yourself a tendency to go up and down, then you must find a way to correct that. You have to make yourself dependable. A person may win some victories, but if he is also often at the bottom, then I cannot afford to depend on him.

**208.** If I see a high team average, I think it is good, but if I see that each member has a similar high average then I value that team even more because I know that it is a stable team. Once you are stable as a leader your team will grow. For your first few months or even the first year it is too early to tell about you. But after a long time, if your teams are still up and down, with some members having very high results and others very low results, even though your team average is very good, the situation reflects your poor organization. By looking at all the results together I can tell a lot about what has happened on a team.

**209.** A good leader has to be leader of heart, but at the same time he has to be smart. He must be able to evaluate the whole environment.

**210.** Be sure of what you are fundraising for. The objective is not to make a few thousand dollars; your overall goal is much greater than that. While you are learning how to get the best result, without even realizing it you are also walking the road to perfect leadership, so that in three years you can go to a state and effectively lead a thousand people.

**211.** If you can fundraise well, you shouldn't have too much difficulty in securing manpower. This is what you will have to do in the future. I am thinking about using the top team leaders for witnessing.

**212.** Restoring people is our primary goal. To do that, there is only one rule: to love the people in the same way that a father loves his son. That is the greatest rule in raising people.

**213.** If you know how to win people and educate them, and if you know how to earn money, then what else can you do? Actually, even many congressmen or senators do not have these qualities to a great degree. You would be surprised how many Congressmen depend on other people to subsidize them in running for office. They depend on other people's help, whereas we depend on our own abilities.

**214.** When we have good organization, a deep sense of responsibility, and we carry out our plans meticulously, then we can pull the spirit world down to cooperate with us.

**215.** When we start to do something, we had better be confident; otherwise, what we do is not substantial. Before I do anything I always make sure I am confident.

**216.** The point is that we should want to work even more than we desire to eat. If you are hungry and want to eat, but even more than that you want to do your work, then you understand how you ought to be. If you are concerned least about your appetite, then you are okay.

**217.** When you are dealing with people, do not ever think of yourself as being in a higher position. Do not ever think of people as handsome or ugly. A person of universal character would never view someone else that way.

**218.** We must become people unashamed of ourselves. If you can think about God and still not be ashamed, then you have passed the most difficult examination.

**219.** As a team captain you should always figure out how much better you can do this month than last month. Then you can make a plan, taking into consideration all the personalities on your team. Make a workable plan and stretch yourself to fulfill it.

*Leadership: To MFT Captains 3-16-77*

**220.** When you are the leader of a state then the minimum attention you must give it is to go around and see what is there for you to pay attention to and love. You must make a complete tour around your state at least one time. When I initially came to America in 1965 the first thing I did was go around the United States at the fastest possible speed. I just kept moving, not sleeping in a motel, and not eating in restaurants.

**221.** Never worry when some difficulty comes to you; just pay attention to the next step. The difficulty could defeat you or it could resurrect you to the highest possible level under the circumstances. You must remain confident that as long as you are one with God, He will never abandon you. Your situation may seem bad, and it may be bad, but the moment that you can go over the difficulty then it will benefit the side of goodness to an equivalent degree.

**222.** When the opposition is fiercest then I am the most intensely interested in what will happen next, and what reward or what lesson will follow.

**223.** When you really do not know what to do with yourself then stir up some controversy; go pick a fight with a multitude and let them really knock you out. Be grateful when you are beaten and take advantage of that moment. If you really understand this, then you will see why I actually do not mind opposition so much. In fact, I welcome it. When you are beaten without cause then naturally you become indignant, and then you have inspiration to fight again.

**224.** It is stated in the Bible that if you treat a man as a righteous man then you will receive the reward of a righteous man. However much you can give yourself to your members equals what God will be able to give you.

**225.** Please remain humble. If you are not arrogant, then you can easily begin this way of life. Even though you are in a leadership position you should feel that you are the most miserable, unworthy being in the whole history of man. This can be compared to the different kinds of wire

which can conduct electricity. Copper is a good conductor, but pure gold is even better, while iron and other metals are inferior conductors. Presently you are like the poorest conductor, but as you are refined, you will become like pure gold.

**226.** If you as a leader do not experience these spiritual things, then something is not complete. Once your mind reaches that level, but you do not have people who are close to you that you can share deeply with, then you can talk to a tree and the tree will talk back to you. You will witness that a tree actually talks, as expressively as if it were dancing. This is not imaginary. The tree can actually be company for you. It is so natural that heaven is in you and in us; heaven depends on man.

**227.** At home when I hear the sound of someone dropping a piece of China, I immediately feel, "Oh, I broke that, not her." If that person breaks a piece once, then twice and even three times, still I do not say anything. That person feels very ashamed, and in passing me our eyes do not meet, and she wants to go somewhere else. That sensitivity is a beautiful aspect of human beings; both that person and I know what she is feeling. That kind of awareness is absolutely necessary in becoming a leader.

**228.** The key to being respected as a leader is your concern for others. If you hate others, then you can achieve nothing.

**229.** You must take a humble position; one way of doing this is to regard everybody as your teacher. Then you can learn many things from other people which will in turn improve you.

**230.** Have you ever experienced watching over members as they slept and found yourself shedding tears just to see them? In their lives your members realized that there is not a place of goodness in this wide world that can be relied upon, and they continued wandering like children until they finally found rest in your home. Have you felt such a realization about them? In your heart you can be really grateful to them because they came and settled in you, and out of gratitude you would bow to them for their trust in you. Can you understand this? That kind of heart is necessary because you are responsible for their lives.

**231.** I always think that you have been looking for a leader such as myself. In this respect all of your members would like to have you be for them what I am for you. From this moment on you should realize your situation and repent, thinking, "I haven't been that way; I haven't been a true messiah but a false one." Start over again from this point. Even after your members are asleep at night, pray over them and then they will grow and mature. I began this tradition even before you were born. This is the relationship between father and child. You must always be aware of your members, soaking your clothing and your rugs with tears.

**232.** It does not matter how many times another deceives you or betrays your expectations. Do not give up because you will not lose. I was actually betrayed many times and know that I will

continue to be betrayed, but I am secure in my way, and I go on. I have never found that my position gets worse; instead, it is always improving. That is the heavenly standard.

**233.** I have had many sleepless nights, particularly in the 1950's. How could I humanly continue to do that? My sense of joy and happiness was so great that in talking to new members around me I wanted to continue hour after hour, even until 3 o'clock in the morning. If one of them had to leave because he had something to do in the morning, I felt really sorry to see him go, wishing that he could stay longer. You must experience these feelings also. When I missed him that much, I knew that he would return in the shortest possible time because he could not bear the separation either.

**234.** Many people are presently coming into the Church, but many members are also leaving. We can easily diagnose why: instead of giving respect and love to them, their leaders have been treating them in an opposite way. If you only want them to love and respect you, then your relationship with them will not last too long.

**235.** Because of the experience I have shared with God it is easy for me to be a natural person once I step down from my official position. After addressing the public, I step down from the platform into the position of an everyday person. I never want to take an arrogant position over anybody, in any way. At first you may have felt that you could do anything with me, and you felt confident of yourselves, but soon enough you discovered that this was not so. I am not so easily accessible. This authority comes naturally from my having shed so many tears for God.

*How To Witness: To State Leaders 4-1-77*

**236.** What kind of leader do you want? One who sits on a chair and only speaks to you to make you work hard, or someone who can act as well as speak?

**237.** Unless you have conviction accompanied by courage and boldness you will not fulfill the will of God. The man without those qualities cannot be part of God's dispensation, but if for God's purpose men can become bold and courageous then they shall play the central role in God's history, not only for the present, but all throughout the ages. Because God is eternal there is no exception to this either in the past, present, or future.

*The Road of Religion and the Will of God 4-24-77*

**238.** If any of you state leaders want to be served because you hold some position, then you will never be successful. You have to start out as a servant of servants and go through each step. Unless

you demonstrate the true spirit of service you will never be successful because the Unification Church was not built that way. You must go the path that I went.

**239.** If you would be a leader, you must inherit my spirit. In whatever mission you are doing, if all of a sudden you just burst into tears, feeling such a sense of urgency and sorrow for God, then your mission will definitely prosper.

*The 23rd Anniversary of the Unification Church  
and the History of God's Dispensation 5-1-77*

**240.** No matter how rough I am or how hard I push you, it is never for my sake but for the sake of humanity. My conscience does not hurt because God knows very well that I am only working for His benefit.

**241.** You must become the type of person who can give and take in many directions, such as front and rear, up and down, and left and right. God is like this type of person.

*Happy Unification Church Members 5-22-77*

**242.** The true teacher looks at your future and paints a dream and a vision for you. With that goal ahead of you he will then discipline and inspire you to do your best. If the teacher is pushing you and giving you a hard time, it is not for the sake of the present, but for the future.

*Our Pride 6-5-77*

**243.** Sometimes I speak harshly and bluntly, and sometimes I even scold you. But when you see that my anger is motivated by concern for others and for the cause of restoration, you know my purpose is an unselfish one. Then you can willingly accept it. On the other hand, if a leader speaks strongly to you and you can see that his motivation is selfish then you don't want to follow his direction.

**244.** Any leader must at some time choose individuals to fill responsible positions. What is my criterion for choosing leaders in the Unification Church? The one quality I most dislike in a person is the habit of being selfishly motivated. I will give the most responsibility to those who are unselfish. It is as simple as that. With this simple understanding you will be able to evaluate teachers, philosophers, societies, and nations.

**245.** When you cause damage you must pay the penalty, but the reverse is equally true: the more you willingly suffer, the more you will ultimately be reimbursed. The greater the persecution you endure, the greater the blessing you will receive.

*Let Us Think Once More 6-12-77*

**246.** The important thing is whether you leaders in particular have the kind of conviction to work 24 hours a day, being absolutely crazy about God's work morning, noon, and evening. Are you that dedicated, that single-minded? If you become that kind of leader, then you will raise up that kind of follower.

**247.** I have come to one conclusion: in an atmosphere of persecution, you will do your absolute, unselfish best and then you will win unselfish followers and become one with them. It is the only way you can create that important spiritual link. You must feel that you are born for this mission and that you will leave this tradition behind.

**248.** You leaders must not become complacent. You think that if you have a few members, that they can go out and do the witnessing and fundraising and come home and do the cleaning and cooking at the center. If you give orders in that way, you will bring to yourself the worst kind of curse you can receive as a leader! A leader should be crying out at night with more tears than anyone else.

**249.** I want you to know that there is no way you can come close to me or be a true leader of the Unification Church without going this path of tears and suffering. You have been crying, but for whom did you shed tears? For whom has your tongue spoken? Have you pitied yourself or had some anger you could not contain? Your tears should be for God and humanity and your tongue should be speaking for God and humanity. Then you are truly Unification Church members.

*The Ones Who Can Receive God's Love 10-1-77*

**250.** The chief question is for whom do you weep? If a village realizes that a person is crying for the sake of the village then the entire village has to bow down to him. That act is noble because it is not for the person's sake but for the sake of the village. If there is someone who sheds tears for the sake of the nation, then the entire nation is benefited, and the citizens should bow down and respect that person.

**251.** All the leadership in our movement should be praying special night-long prayers in tears. You are most likely not going to lift your faces to look at God because there is some shame in your

hearts. Are you just waiting for some great things to happen to the Unification Church without shedding tears? You can't expect blessing to come to you without shedding tears.

**252.** The true leaders of the Unification Church are those with tears.

**253.** You all know very well what kind of men you are. Don't try to cover up and hide yourselves but get out of the shadows; on the other hand, don't come to the Unification Church just to be somebody. When a leadership position must be filled, don't try to build your image up as a leader in the hope of being chosen. If your heart is not ready, you are certainly not a leader.

*The Return to Tears 10-16-77*

**254.** Those who are in leadership positions have to think about everything in advance, planning what to do in certain situations a month and a year from now.

**255.** I already mentioned that the true host is the king or national leader who can offer a vision not only for 100 years but for 1,000 years in the future, steering the nation toward that long-distant future prosperity. That leader is thinking about what kind of tradition to leave behind him to be like a railroad track along which his people can progress. The true leader is concerned about this tradition. What kind of qualifications would this kind of national leader have? Most of all, he should not be centered on himself. He would want not only to give himself for the betterment and prosperity of people in the future, but also be able to elaborate on the central core truth of an eternal, lasting tradition.

*Host of the Future 10-23-77*

**256.** Sometimes I criticize a leader publicly without much reason, in such a way that I know he will later hear about it. Then I look to see how he reacts. I myself was tested many times in this fashion. God is really a strategist, and this is one of His techniques. One moment I felt like I was on top of the mountain, but the next day I found myself way down in the valley, even upside down!

*The Course of Life and Restoration by Indemnification 2-26-78*

**257.** What is the most ideal philosophy for leadership? The ideal way of life should be welcomed by people of the past and the present and future. That one way of life should be embraced by all, not rejected by some.



**258.** The center does not exist for its own sake; it exists to relate to others. In order to stand there you must forget about yourself and worry about others.

*Sorrow and Tears 3-1-78*

**259.** A public person should act as a public person. You cannot lie or be late for appointments. You must keep time because that is a public thing. If you announce that something will happen at a certain hour then it must happen because that has a public purpose.

**260.** The public person always sacrifices himself for the purpose of the greater cause and God. I give you orders because you are public people, and I also am a public person.

**261.** You are a public figure, and you actually don't even have the liberty to go to the bathroom freely. Finally, we must walk the Principle way. Unless you live this Principle, you cannot cross the bridge between the physical world and spirit world.

*My Life 3-12-78*

**262.** This is how I evaluate our leaders: is a certain person going to be arrogant or indifferent to other people and think of his own position more than anything else?

**263.** A leader may be unyielding and uncompromising, but if he is centered only on God then it may be permissible. In this way I am very much down to earth and democratic. To eliminate the satanic blood in our bodies we must go in the opposite direction, the non-self-centered way.

*I Proclaim That I Know 4-1-78*

**264.** When you clash with difficulty there is bound to be some loss or casualty, yet that will never deter you. It will spur you on even more. Imagine that in combat you are fighting as a commander to take a certain hill but there are terrible casualties. Instead of retreating when you see that so many comrades have died because of that hill, you will be even more determined to finally achieve that goal. That's the way a commander should feel.

*Time and Our Destined Relationship 4-2-78*

**265.** Persevere and contemplate; then build the foundation and provide working leadership. Nothing short of this will get you anywhere.

*Perseverance and Contemplation 8-27-78*

**266.** A true central figure should be thinking like a father would think. Without that parental heart anyone in that position is a false central person.

*The Importance of Prayer 4-15-79*

## FATHER'S LIFE COURSE

---

**38.** I told you a few weeks ago that for 6,000 years God did only one thing, which was to work to restore one Adam. Now I have restored Eve, one family, and the foundation for the country in only thirty years. I have prepared the Abel position on the worldwide level; in eighteen years I finished what I thought would take 21 years. Can you compare that to winning three people in forty days?

*The Glorious Sortie 8-1-78*

**39.** The first seven years of the 21-year course were equivalent to the Old Testament era. Starting in 1968 the next seven years were restitution for the New Testament era. The first seven years were the era of the parents, and the next seven years were the children's era in which they had to be tested under tribulation. All the blessed children had to withstand difficulties. The blessed couples were tested and hardened so that they could become absolute, unconditional followers of the True Parents, and even if their children became beggars or orphans, they would go to fulfill True Parents' will. That tradition had to be laid in the second seven years. By then the 36, 72, 120, 430 and 777 couples were blessed. They thought that finally they could enjoy family life, but all of a sudden God said, "Leave this place," and tossed them out. The three years and six months from 1970 to 1973 were a period of absolute tribulation for the couples. In 1970 I told the blessed couples, who of course had children by then, to pack up and leave their families for the mission. There was no room for flexibility. Many of the children went to orphanages because there was no one else to take care of them and the husband and wife went their separate ways. You can imagine the accusations I received at that time for blessing those families and then splitting them up; people couldn't believe this would be the work of God. Even those who obeyed me received accusation for following such a crazy man. But unless they faced utmost adversity, how could they show their absolute loyalty to God?

**40.** This was how the second seven-year course ended. As a result, I could leave for the worldwide mission in the middle of those seven years, and in 1971 I arrived in America. I could say to those couples in Korea, "You have overcome the utmost hardship for three years and six months and still you are loyal. I can trust you to take care of Korea. Now I can leave to take care of the world." I left Korea in the hands of those blessed couples.

**41.** I had to complete restitution of the New Testament era on the worldwide level before 1974. Our goal will never be less than the worldwide level, so I had until 1974 to set the condition of America and worldwide Christianity welcoming me. In 1972, 1973 and 1974 I went city to city in all fifty states, and on the initial trips people welcomed me with proclamations and letters of appreciation. By being welcomed in that way I linked Korean Christianity to worldwide

Christianity. Even though Korean Christians opposed me on the national level, American Christians welcomed me initially. Their welcome offered one more chance for Christianity since America represented the worldwide foundation.

42. The Korean origin had to be linked with the worldwide base. In 1974 the initial worldwide foundation in America was successfully accomplished and I could link it with Korea, so I initiated the crusades in Asia. I left at the end of 1974 and sent the IOWC ahead to Japan and Korea. Unification Church members from all over the world came to Korea trying to give that nation a holy baptism. At that time the Korean government and Christians were fierce enemies, like a cat and mouse, with myself in the center as a mediator. In order to consummate the New Testament era, the government and Christianity must be united, not in conflict. When the Unification Church stepped in to mediate, the Christian churches initiated a major confrontation. In every city of my speaking tour in Korea, the Christian churches staged demonstrations to keep people away.

43. Two thousand years ago the political power of Rome and Israel united together and crucified Jesus, but in restitution America welcomed me and Korea accepted me. Events in Korea fulfilled this completely and a spiritual victory was won in America and translated into a physical victory in Korea. Upon that victorious foundation I came back to the West and began the key campaigns for Yankee Stadium and Washington Monument. On April 30, 1973, I was given the right of permanent residency in America. This was a great contribution from America to the Unification Church because on this foundation we were able to launch these key campaigns.

44. I wanted to win the utmost victory in the first three years of the third seven-year course, but I shortened the schedule by one year. I originally scheduled the Washington Monument Rally for 1977, but I wanted to do better, so right after the Yankee Stadium crusade I initiated the Washington Monument campaign. At Yankee Stadium we had heavy rain, almost like crucifixion and then resurrection. From that point the real third seven-year course started and I determined to have the Washington Monument Rally on September 18 that year.

45. America is in the position of Rome, and 2,000 years ago in Rome many occult sects flourished, but in America, God-centered religion had a base. Two thousand years ago Rome was trying to oppress Israel, but today's America has tried to help Korea, making restitution. Being given permanent residency by America was comparable to the Roman Empire welcoming Jesus 2,000 years ago. From April 30, 1973, until September 18, 1976, the main chapter of the dispensation in the United States unfolded. I never made public speeches in Korea but started in America. When I pushed hard, I expected opposition. From April 30, 1973, until the end of February 1974 which was the end of the second seven-year course, I made preparations to launch the big campaigns in the third seven-year course, the full-scale worldwide dispensation.

46. The Washington Monument victory demonstrated that our power and influence were growing and the American government, which welcomed me at first, now felt threatened and several departments started to pressure our Church. Always in the background were the

communists. This was very good in the sense that they declared war against me and the Unification Church even before we won the victory of unity in the free world. It came earlier than we expected, which meant that God's dispensation could be shortened.

**47.** The Washington Monument Rally was the largest religious rally ever held in the nation's capital and over 300,000 people came. The world felt threatened after they saw that huge gathering and governments tried to use their power to suppress us. I knew that worldwide opposition would come so I prepared ahead of time for us to receive it head-on. In 1975 I had sent missionaries to 127 nations to act as lightning rods and receive that persecution in my position. In the midst of these adverse conditions the Washington Monument Rally took place.

**48.** The Washington Monument Rally was the final accounting of God's dispensation. The individual, family, tribe, nation and world—everything at one time was offered to God and restitution could be made for all of history. That was the meaning of Washington Monument.

**49.** The Washington Monument Rally was a miracle. In a climate of hostile public opinion, I planned the rally to take place in only 78 days. Yankee Stadium was real indemnity and our members' morale was low because they felt we had failed. Lifting them up and moving them toward September 18 was an impossible job. This kind of national rally usually takes one- or two-years preparation, but I started only 78 days ahead of time. The most important hurdle was getting permission from the U.S. Parks Service to use the Washington Monument grounds, and it was granted only forty days before September 18.

**50.** It was the final showdown between the satanic world and heavenly world and because the Unification Church represented the heavenly world, Satan mobilized all his power to crush it at Washington Monument. I had information about what was happening behind the scenes, and I knew that if Washington Monument had been a failure, then the government would have moved immediately to crush the Unification Church. The Washington Monument Rally was the culminating showdown of my entire life; no matter how much I had accomplished up until that time, if I had failed then, everything would have crumbled. You can imagine my seriousness.

**51.** All the Old Testament, New Testament and Completed Testament conditions are fulfilled and now my order is for you to trust me and boldly go out and fight for God and the True Parents.

*Washington Monument 9-18-78*

**52.** My achievements can be described in mathematical terms. I gave three blessings in 1960, after the installation of the True Parents; the first was given to the three couples in the position of three archangels and the chief disciples in Jesus' time. Then the 36 couples were blessed, representing three stages of twelve; formation, growth, perfection; and Adam, Jesus and Lord of

the Second Advent. Those 36 couples include all races in history. The 72 couples represent the nation and 124 couples represent the world. I added four extra couples in that blessing, representing room for all the criminals in the world to be forgiven and receive salvation. The 430 couples represent Korea's history of 4,300 years, as well as the suffering of the Israelites for 430 years in Egypt. After I blessed the 430 couples we started our Exodus out of Egypt for Canaan, and then I could bless 43 couples around the world in Japan, Europe and America.

In 1970 I blessed 777 couples, representing three stages of seven. That blessing encompassed all races and territory of the world, meaning that the family covered every facet and part of the world. Then 1800 couples were blessed in 1975. Next is your turn, and perhaps there will be 3,000 couples.

*The Completion Period for the Dispensation 11-12-78*

**53.** Everything you do is dress rehearsal until you meet someone you can serve absolutely. Elementary school children serve their teachers, college students make friends with and serve their professors, all of them respect their parents, and so forth. All of this is preparation for them to give their ultimate service to their fellow man. Everything culminates in service between men and women. Keep in mind that you must serve and give to the people. If you do that then you will become popular. Your teachers and friends will all love you. They will say, "Come to my room. Without you I am very lonely. You are my best friend." Your professors will say, "Without you my class is a very lonely place. Please don't be absent." That's the practice of serving.

*Breaking the Barrier 12-10-78*

**54.** From December 18, 1971, when I entered America, until 1976 the entire world came against me, but I used the same tactic of fighting the lonely battle. No one came to my aid. When I first came, even the American leaders of our Church didn't completely believe me, and still they are sometimes skeptical. But I fought the lonely battle, bringing our worldwide leaders to this country and training them. I never revealed my full plan to anyone, even my closest assistants; I just gave instructions to them. When I told the leaders to do something, however, there was no discussion because I had already done what I was asking of them, and they were only repeating my own victory.

*Home Church and the Completion of the Kingdom of Heaven 1-1-79*

# THE PATH OF ABEL

---

## EDITOR'S NOTE

*The diagram shown is not the original one but is illustrated here to make this speech more easily understood. Also, the original translation of The Path of Abel was given in the third person and has been changed here to the first person.*

My subject is "The Path of Abel." We have been taught that Abel is the central figure in the providence of God. Abel is in the place of Adam, but Abel cannot tread on his road or path without the cooperation of others. And he must be equipped with certain conditions. The first thing is faith. The next thing he would want to have is an offering. On the foundation of faith he will make the offering and the offering represents his own life and his whole being. In the course of restoration, we always reach God through an offering. We can never make light of the offering because it represents our faith, our life and our own being. The path for Abel is to reach God through the offering or beyond the offering.

In order to make offerings before God, we must become one with the offering so that it will signify that our own selves are the offering; but unless our mind and body become one, we cannot be a wholesome offering to God. Without our mind and body becoming one and being put together with the offering, we cannot reach God and the offering will not be acceptable to God. The offering not only represents oneself, but the whole world, because one's self represents the whole world. Well, the offering to the right is God and to the left is Satan. With you as the offering, the same thing is true: to your right is God and to your left is Satan. But you must remember, what we need is God, not Satan—and we want to have our offering accepted by God, not by Satan.

Then what is an offering? An offering is a creation; something created; created things. Then why do we have to put the things of creation between God and ourselves? That means to place ourselves on the vertical line. Originally, without the human fall, man was to dominate all things; but due to the human fall, man is to reach God through the offering. That is, we have to bow down before the offering in order to reach God. In falling, the heavier thing would fall first or would be at the bottom. So, since the human fall came about, due to sinful men heavy with evil and sin, then man's dominatorship was taken away and man is to bow down before all other things. If I were to go into details, it would take hours—but I am going to make it simple, as simple as possible, so that it will take a short time. But you must know this thing to a certain extent because you are going to be leaders of other groups, and when you have questions from them, you must be able to answer them.

In other words, man is worse than all other things, as the Bible says. Our making the offering is to bring us back to the position from which we originally fell. In other words, we have to restore ourselves to the original station or status. So, I repeat; only through the offering can we reach God. We must remember that on both sides of ourselves and on both sides of the offering, there are God and Satan. With Satan added to me or clinging to me, can we make a good offering to God? (No!) Therefore, we must be desperate to unite our mind and body into one to offer to God, because if those two are separated our flesh side is vulnerable to Satan; so in our desperate effort to make those into one, we will put it with the offering and go to God. Otherwise, there is no way for us to reach God, and our mind is in the position of Adam, while our flesh side is in the position of the archangel, and we have to have our fleshly side obey Adam, just as we have to make the archangel obey Adam. In that case, our fleshly side is in the position of the archangel restored to the original position without having anything to do with sin. So, Satan will be separated. Do you understand?

So, when you make offerings, if you are greedy and harsh and selfish, and if you think of the reward coming from the offering, that is nullified, and the offering will not be accepted by God.

Self-centeredness and selfishness is prohibited there and if you have those elements, more satanic power will take hold of you. With your mind and your body—one in the position of Adam and the other in the position of the archangel—put together, you can separate Satan, and you can become one with God, and Satan has nothing to do with you at that moment. Then, with yourself put together with the creation, you restore your dominatorship over the creation.

You must make this clear. When your mind and body become one, that means that Adam and the archangel become one and your wholeness will become one with the offering and then, that is a condition having nothing to do with sin or Satan. In that case you have restored your dominatorship over the creation without the satanic invasion there. In that situation you have restored yourself and you have restored the creation and you have restored the dominatorship of Adam without the fall, so you can be one with God.

To put it in order, by Adam and the archangel being separated from each other, man lost the dominatorship over the creation. So, by Adam and the archangel, by the man in Adam's position and the other in the position of the archangel, becoming one—mind in Adam's position and fleshly side in the archangel's position—they become one and restore the dominatorship over all things. Do you understand that much? So, you must be very serious in making offerings. If you do it at random or make light of it, you will be punished. That is a grave question.

In any religion we see that they make offerings. In a cult religion or any low-level religions, in any of that type of religion, we find that they make offerings of some kind. When you make donations, contributions, alms to the church, it is a type of offering. In human society, we exchange gifts with other people; if you calculate something, some reward coming from them, that is not the



way it should be. If the gift is going to add up to the common interest of the two, it will be all right; but if in giving the gifts, you have a self-centered idea, it is not the way it should be. If you are giving the gift to that person as a reward for something you have already been given from him, that is very good. In utterance, too, when we say things for a selfish purpose, in order to make that person sacrifice himself for the sake of yourself, that is no way for your tongue to be used. You must remember.

I am not just saying ordinary things, but this is the measure by which to judge you. Without following Abel, you cannot go into the Kingdom of Heaven. This is absolutely necessary for you to know. Everything we see, everything we hear, everything we utter—all those things must be in accordance with that law. For us fallen men we must go to God by going through the offering and by doing, ourselves being the offering.

So, you must think of things, say things and act out things for the sake of others at the sacrifice of your own self. In the path of faith, would you think we are in need of offering or not? In the Divine Principle, which you are learning now, you have learned about the Foundation of Faith. Then, what can decide on the Foundation of Faith? What? (To sacrifice ourselves!) The condition of sacrifice, yes. Without the Foundation of Faith there, we cannot have or enjoy the Foundation of Substance. But it is not that after the Foundation of Faith is laid, then the Foundation of Substance will be on the top of that, but those two must come together—must be created or produced together. With the Foundation of Faith, you will give the offering and by giving the offering you, yourself, play the role of the offering and those two go together. Only by your mind and body becoming one as the wholesome sacrifice, then can you have another as such in Cain's position with you in the position of Abel.

So, the person with his mind and body separated, without becoming one with each other, cannot be placed in Abel's position at all. So, by doing this, if and when you form the Foundation of Substance—only then can you march forward to God. What does the offering decide on? (The Foundation of Faith). And what does the Foundation of Substance decide on? (The Foundation of Faith). The Foundation of Substance, or if you have restored the substantial foundation in yourself, you must be able to subjugate Cain, because you are in Abel's position. If you are to really restore yourself as the Foundation of Substance, you cannot do that all by yourself. Without Cain there you cannot restore the Foundation of Substance in yourself. That means, without being able to subjugate Cain, you have not really restored yourself.

At the time of the fall, Adam lost faith in God and then lost the Foundation of Substance in himself, because he was not so created as to be simple. So, in the restoration course he must restore himself, and at the same time, after having restored himself on the Foundation of Faith, he must be able to restore one in Cain's position. After having done all these, he can restore the love from God. At the time of the fall, Adam lost his faith, lost his substantial being; that is, he lost his original status, and then he lost love. All those three things he lost at the time of the fall and they

must be restored. But when do we locate or restore the love? Only when the Messiah comes! The Messiah being the source of love, you would want to receive that love; but without your having restored the substance in yourself, and without your having restored the faith, you cannot be entitled to that, to the love from him. With the Messiah as the mediator, or with your becoming one, you can enjoy the love from God and God Himself will be yours. Is it clear to you? You must bear this in mind.

In the course of restoration, you must be able to restore your faith, your being as the substance, and the love; those three things must be restored. In order for you to be able to restore your faith, you must be able to unite your mind and body into one. Without this done, you cannot separate Satan from yourself. After restoring yourself by putting your mind and body into one, resembling God, you can really become one with the created things, as the offering, which is intact from the sin from Satan, and then by putting yourself into oneness with the offering, you can be one with God. Your restored self is in the position of mind or Abel, and the created things are in the position of Cain or the external you; only when those two are put together can you really subjugate those in the position of Cain.

In restoring Cain, you cannot just subjugate him, but you must be able to pour out your energy, your love and everything to him and win his mind; then he will reach you through the offering. Well, in return, he would like to give you gifts—or through some condition, he would like to join you and be put together with you—you can be the whole offering to God and you are the qualified being. In that case, Cain will inherit what you, as Abel, have already restored. In that case, you and the person in Cain's position are something like Adam and the archangel restored. So, love from God will be the next thing, and with you in the position of Abel and that person in the position of Cain, put together—only then are you entitled to minister to or to have the Messiah.

Due to the human fall, we are born of the lineage of Satan, so we have to shift the lineage into that of the Messiah—and in doing that, we have to be able to separate Satan first of all, and then become one with Cain; then we can go to the Messiah. Then, why do we need the Messiah as the mediator? We want to separate from the lineage of Satan and belong to the lineage of our True Parents. The Messiah is the one who is in the position of the True Parents; after having restored ourselves by subjugating Cain, we want to restore our life by being shifted to another lineage of purity, and we need the Messiah in that position as the True Parents, and we must be reborn out of him, in the bondage of love, Divine Love from him. It is sort of the reverse way to restore ourselves to the original position. Then, do we really need the Messiah? (Yes!) You must know this clearly. You cannot need or have the Messiah all by yourself. You must be able to subjugate Cain and become one with him, and only after having done that can you reach him.

Due to the human fall, we are divided into two. We are twos, each of us are twos. Due to the fall, man is divided into two, and so by putting those two into one, only by our mind and body becoming one, can we be wholesome individuals. Without the human fall, was there any Cain-

type and Abel-type in ourselves? (No!) Adam was whole as Adam, and Eve was a wholesome woman, as an individual. But division came about in our own selves, so without putting those two into one we cannot be wholesome as individuals. But even though you are one like that, between your mind and body, can you go to Heaven all by yourself? (No!) Then, who can send you to Heaven—Cain? Abel? Then, we can well say the Cain is the one who can send you to Heaven, because without subjugating Cain, without uniting yourself with Cain, you cannot go to Heaven. Well, in other words, we can even use an extreme expression, saying that Satan is the one who will send us to Heaven, because he must let us go; unless he is separated from us, unless he lets us go, we cannot go to Heaven. Isn't that true? (Yes!)

Well, when you know this clearly, you may as well say, "Well, God is the greatest, but the second greatest is Cain." Without the cooperation of Cain, or the Cain-type element or the Cain-type group, you are not entitled to Heaven. So, this has been the obstacle, this has been the key to the Kingdom of God. Because of this, Jesus had to die. Because of this not having been done, I had to go through difficulties. I, in the position of Abel, know all these theories, but the Cains are blind to the fact, and I have been so agonized for them.

This has been the formula, and this still is the formula—having to be a pride to the Providence—and this Abel is anxious to get your cooperation and get you to become one with him, but you are so black, and you are blind to the fact, and you are reluctant to become one with him, always in slumber. You don't know the time, whether it is morning or evening. That is what makes me agonized all the way. Without applying the formula, no problem in human society will be solved—but in the degree of your being attached to me, there is a vast difference from each other, there is a variety of degrees. You have your own Cain. Do you, or don't you? Restored Cain? You are in absolute need of Cain, restored by your own hands. Aren't you? (Yes!) Then, the one in the position of Cain to you is worth more than your life—you must know that if you are going to be given real life. Then, in what way and where can you subjugate Cain? Well, in relaxation in your own home, sleeping and eating as usual, can you do that? You must be able to restore Cain on the individual level, but in the end, you must be able to subjugate Cains on the worldwide level—and which would you prefer to do? (Worldwide level!) The Messiah is the person who is here to subjugate Cains in the past, in the present and in the future. That is because he is the central figure of the whole history of mankind. If all the people of the world knew that the Messiah is such a person, would they believe in him or not?

Theoretically and in Principle, all the people of the world are going to be united into one and it will prove true. This is the secret, and this has been the secret between God and Satan—and with this interwoven in human history, all entangled things came about, and we must solve or resolve or dissolve those things according to the formula. If the Christian people had understood that the offering has been so important, and that, in returning to God we must be able to subjugate or get the cooperation of Cain, they could not have been corrupted like this. This is why we witness to the people; do you know all this clearly? Without this done, how can you restore the whole

world? This is the only way, the only path for us to reach God. By restoring all the rest of the people, we will go back to God. Otherwise, we will remain in a position near Satan.

You have your clothing on, but you must always think that things are always in the position of the offering, including your flesh. In other words, your fleshly side is in the position of Cain to your mind as Abel. So, your fleshly side has something to do with Satan, connected with him. You must realize this fact. Isn't that true? But there is the tape or channel going back and forth from your mind to God, from God to your mind. Well, only by your mind subjugating your fleshly side and becoming one with that is your clothing yours. Clothing, in that case, is not the mind or the body, but yours as a whole being. Then, your clothing has nothing to do with Satan, and will be wholly yours; and with that wholesome you, put together with Cain, by your subjugating Cain and getting cooperation from Cain, you can really be qualified to reach God.

Your table, radio, bed, television, and everything else you have in your possession are the offerings. Everything in the position of Cain has something to do with your fleshly side. Well, in the worldly sense, your own physical parents, your brothers and sisters, your children, relatives, neighbors and friends—those are all in Cain's position. But with your mind is associated your passed-away ancestors, or even your physical parents, friends, relatives, if they are on the side of good. Whenever you look at a thing in your possession, you must re-evaluate that: "Have I got this by deceiving other people, by some evil means?" If that is true, this is Satan, and the satanic invasion is already there. So, you must be horrified enough to throw it away; but otherwise, if you have obtained this thing through good means, righteous means, you may enjoy that as yours. If you know this, with this idea in mind, can you rob things from others? In that case you must know that you have robbed an explosive bomb from people, and it will explode in you. Well, with that in mind, how can you enjoy that thing?

Any material things, any group of people, or any individuals—when you are faced with them, you must be able to help them be united with you; otherwise, they are always in the position of enemy, in the position of Cain or Satan. You, in the position of Adam or Abel, must be able to do that. You are not going to be dragged by them, but you are going to absorb them to your side. Well, until you have done this, you cannot, in the real sense, have your spouse. You are in need of your spouse, but only after you have perfected yourself like this. So, up to the present moment, in all religions, they have advocated celibacy, remaining single.

If, at all, there should be matrimony, it should have started right from Adam and Eve without the fall. Is that true? Then, they could have become the True Parents. So, in this fallen world, too, until the True Parents should appear and get married in holy matrimony, no other marriages are recognized in God's sight. Of all the religions, we are the first group in the whole world in which the people have known this formula, known this theory, and the Master which wedded so many couples in accordance with that formula. We are the only group as such. Here

there are some blessed couples, but I don't think they really understand what their blessing truly means.

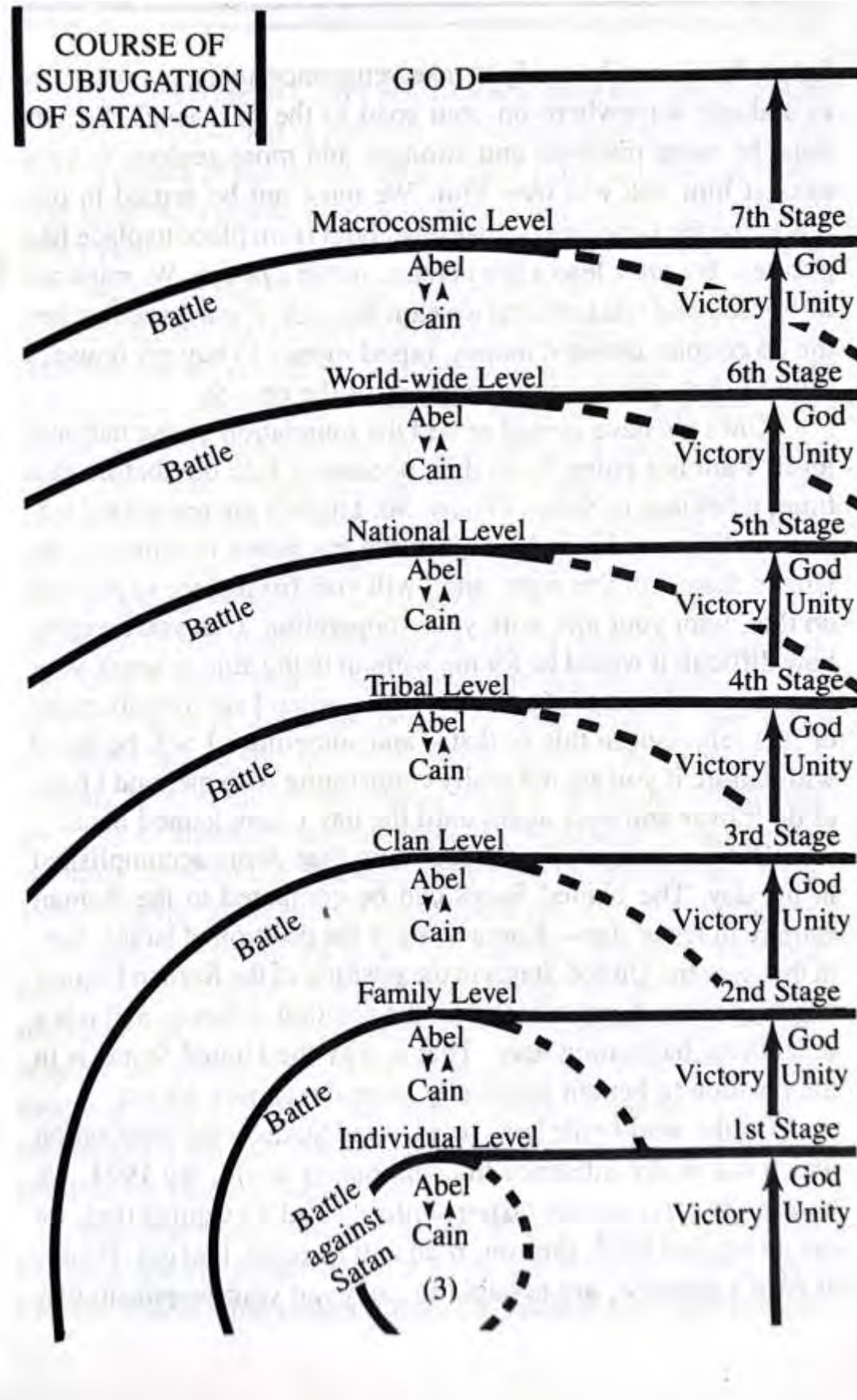
You must know that you have been blessed on a "would be perfected" condition. So, in order for you to reach this condition, even though you may be separated from each other, you have to fulfill that which you have not been able to. That is my love for you: to separate you and send you out to the front-line. Without your having done this, if you would go about from place to place with couples like this, it's a thing of shame, not glory or blessing. It will not be wholesome in God's sight and even Satan will be scornful at you, will poo at you.

I have heard the I.W.'s (Itinerant Workers), the blessed women-folks complain about me having to prolong the term—and they would say, "Well, Father promised us or told us to go out and work as an I.W. for one year, and one year has already passed and he won't let us live as husband and wife." But have you kept the promise and have you fulfilled what you should have fulfilled, in one year? Have you? Have you? Then, what must I do with you? But, in the future, when you really understand this, you will reversely complain about me not having sent you out again. So, I am teaching you clearly this Principle formula now. Do you understand clearly?

It is because I know all this that I am still going through the difficulty. Without that, would I choose to go through the difficulty until now, in order for me to shorten the period and in order for me to accomplish my mission and our mission for the restoration of the world? I am so busy-minded, agonized, and impatient in everything.

With your mind and body put together and as a whole man, with you being able to subjugate Satan/Cain and absorb him to be united into one, only with that done can you meet the Messiah and become one with him; and it is after all has been done that you can really be blessed in the holy matrimony. After the blessing, you must not think that all is finished, or all is done. Well, after the blessing you are really one with the Messiah and if you are in my position, would you not want to take care of the rest of the people; would you not want to restore the whole world back to God's bosom? On the shoulders of the blessed couples the restoration project is made. But your way is easier than mine because I have paved the way, and I am still paving the way in your vanguard and you are just to follow me, you have just to follow my way or else. If I had not done this, without my having paved the way, you as individuals should have done that much, but now you have just to follow me as an example.

(Please refer to diagram on next page.) As for me, I have had to obtain this much all by myself without the cooperation of other people. I have had to restore myself on the individual level, on the family level (I had to restore my family), and I have had to restore things on the clan level, tribal level, national level, worldwide level, and the macrocosmic level including the spirit world. In every stage there was a battle, and after having won the battle, I could obtain this height (individually). After having won the battle and making it a success on the family level, I could



obtain this height (family); after having done that much on the next level, I obtained and gained the next height and so forth. Now, God being infinite, if I could enjoy the infinite height, I could enjoy the magnitude of this power—I am one with God here. On the first stage, I was obtaining this height (diagram); on the second stage, this height and so on, on all levels up to the macrocosmic level. I have obtained this height; you must know that. You must know that the person of the Messiah has had to go through untold difficulties all by himself, separating himself from satanic power. I had to fight against and win over the myriads of Satan—and by me having done this, I attained the individual level of spiritual height, and then going to the next level and on, I have done that with my own power. There has been no one around me to cooperate with me. Can you imagine that? Externally speaking, I may seem to be no more than you, no better than you maybe—but since I have done this much and I am recognized by God as having done this much, that's what makes you humbled before me and well, you don't know why, but you are sort of drawn to me and you want to bow down before me and you feel indebted to me. I am just like any ordinary man, externally, but there is something in me that is worth the whole world. That is why Satan is afraid of me.

The path of the Messiah is always the path of a pioneer. In restoring myself, too, I could not have restored myself by just putting my mind and body into one like this, but I would have to subjugate or absorb the individual in this position, at least three. Then I could obtain this much—and going through the next level of things, I had to absorb or subjugate Cain, and that was more than what it was with this level. Then only could I make the next level of things possible and be successful. Only by becoming one with Cain on a family level could I obtain this much—and with this done, I could attain this height by becoming one with God; and starting at this point, I have had to subjugate those in Cain's position on the next level. Only by putting this together could I go up like this and please God and become one with God. After having done this much, I could start the next level, of course; and in doing that I could not go straight like this—but only by subjugating Cain's position could I go up and become one with God and be recognized by God for my having done this much. By going up and up, the Cain level will be more difficult and become larger and larger like this. Do you understand? (Yes!)

Then, without Cain, can you go up like that? (No!) Only by your becoming one with Cain on this level, and after you have been recognized that you have done well with God, can you go up and become one with God and have His approval—and then you may start the next level.

This point is the point where God's purpose and Cain's purpose meet. Here we will meet God and be approved by God, and here the purposes of Abel and Cain meet—and by God's approval here, the person in Abel's position can start the next level. This is a sort of offering to God, to be accepted by Him, approved by Him.

When you are blessed, you are no more two, but you are two put together to be the offering before God and you must be a wholesome offering. If you are in the position of the offering, do

you have your own will as such? If you insist on your having your own will or own interests, you cannot reach God, only having done this much. There are so many blessed couples in the Divine Principle movement. Put together it is sort of a tribe, Unification Tribe—and if in that tribe, all the couples are separated like that, scattered like this, can they be a wholesome offering to God, can they reach God? No. So, in order for you to really be able to become one with the Messiah, you cannot have a will different from his. So, you must be utterly obedient to me. By this Unification Tribe, this Unification Group, we are able to unite the whole world with our movement and become one. Well, first of all we must get the Democratic world to be united into one with us, and then the Communist world, in the Cain position, to be united with that, and then only with those put together can we really make a good offering, a wholesome offering to God.

Having known all this, can you still say, "We are Westerners" or "People of the western hemisphere don't have much in common with Oriental people. Master is an Oriental man—it is his way and not ours,"? Can you say that? If you keep thinking that way, you are destined to ruin and you are not going to be saved or going to be accomplished. Isn't that true? (Yes!) Then, it is an immovable formula.

Many of you are situated here (diagram) and in the course of subjugating Satan/Cain, you become lax and think you are not going to lose what you gained here, but you are going to be in despair and become utterly powerless, and you will be too helpless to do anything. Then, not only are you nullifying this level, but what you have previously accomplished will be nullified. If you stop doing things from here and fall down to the bottom like this without remaining here; if you fall down below this level, not only what you have done at this level is nullified, but the whole thing which you have previously accomplished will be nullified. If you fall from here down to here, all the levels of things you have previously accomplished will be nullified.

On the individual level, if you subjugate Cain and become one with and are accepted or approved by God, then you in a way have separated from Satan, and Satan is temporarily, but not entirely, separated from you. He will lay in ambush here, on the next level, not here or down here. So, until you subjugate Cain and are accepted by God and become one with God, Satan will not be separated from you. After having been separated from you on the family level, he will go to the next level and wait for you to defeat you. So, if you win this much, he will be waiting here, somewhere, so he will go to the next level and the next level. But, if you win over him, win over Cain, and when you and Cain together go and reach this level, then Satan will be really subjugated and nullified or diminished or ruined, like this. It is not until you have reached this point, that Satan will be really separated from you.

So, you blessed couples, must not be relaxed like that because you are blessed. If you really know the disposition and nature of Satan—will he not be angry that he is defeated on the family level, and be ready to take vengeance against you and lay in ambush somewhere on your road to the next level? So, you must be more resolved and stronger and more zealous to fight against him



and win over him. We must not be settled in one place like the Israelites or roaming about from place to place like gypsies. We must lead a life in tents, not in a house. We must not be housed and relaxed until we gain the goal. Even myself, when the 36 couples donated money, raised money to buy my house, I refused that, just living in the back of the church.

Until we have gained or laid the foundation on the national level, I am not going to do that; because if I do that before that time, it belongs to Satan, I know. So, I myself am not settled yet. I am still a wanderer; I would leave my home to come to the United States for this fight, and I will visit from place to place to do this, with your aid, with your cooperation. Can you imagine how difficult it would be for me without being able to speak your language and being here to direct you, when I see you are more or less reluctant in this or that—and sometimes I will be faced with failure if you are not really cooperating with me, and I have to do it over and over again until the day I have gained here.

But we have accomplished more than Jesus accomplished in his day. The United States can be compared to the Roman Empire in Jesus' day—Korea being in the position of Israel. But, in this age, the United States in the position of the Roman Empire is giving aid to Korea which is in the position of Israel, and it is a great thing happening here. That is why the United States is in the position to benefit spiritually from the chosen nation.

On the worldwide level, the United States is the only nation which can really influence the communist world. By 1974, we have got to carry out our responsibility—and if by doing that, we can go beyond 1975, then our road will be really laid out. If you, in Abel's position, are not able to carry out your responsibility, then those who are in Cain's position will have the right to attack and defeat you—that is possible. History proves that. When the chosen nation of the Israelites could not carry out their mission, God used the Gentile people to attack and defeat their nation, didn't He?

We are in the fight now, and in order to prevent that from happening, among us, and in order for us to do that, we must be mobilized in all our efforts to fight against the satanic power on still broader and broader levels. We must invest ourselves, our minds, our bodies and all our possessions to be used to subjugate Cain. This is something like investment—and we will gain more out of the investment. Well, out of this investment we will gain the restoration of the people, win the people to our side. We are only a handful of people, and if we invest all the people focused on one thing, the profit will be great, I know; but since the time is due, and I know that I must cover the whole country of the United States in a certain period of time, that is why I am scattering all of you to cover all the states. The fight we are fighting here in the United States is the fight on the worldwide level, so we are really serious. If the Northern army is weakened, we must mobilize the Southern army to be used there, and if the Western army is weakened, then the Eastern one, the Eastern army must be mobilized to go and help the Western. We must have a good balance of power everywhere, so we are going to mobilize more members to organize more mobile teams;

that is why we are going through the training course now. This is the final war, final fight here. You must be grateful that you joined in the battle on the worldwide level. You are situated here for the great cause of mankind.

But one thing is there inherent in you. You are entitled to be, well not fully, but entitled to be the children of the True Parents; that is what makes it hard for Satan to grab you away in an instant. So, he will be hesitant to take you away. If you cling to the True Parents, you are still their children. What I have gained is yours; you are estimated by that, so that is why Satan cannot take you away at random. So, you must be grateful to your True Parents for that, too. Do you understand? (Yes!)

In order for you to be able to inherit all that is already accomplished by me, you must first of all become one with me—and to what degree are you one with me? The more I rely on you, the more I expect out of you; I will put you through more difficult frontlines. In that case, are you grateful to me? (Yes!) or reluctant? If you, right there, will win the war, you can enjoy all the spoils and all the gains, successes. Since I can trust...well, since President Kim is the most trusted person in Korea, I brought him here to you, to work for you, but sometimes he feels burdened or difficult. I know he doesn't say that outwardly, but he knows that inwardly he would say to himself, "I thought it would be a little easier here, but he is making it more difficult." But, if we know all this, well, as we reach God, nearer and nearer, our responsibility and our burden will be heavier. Isn't that natural?

In the United States, those old timers and especially those blessed members would think to themselves, "Oh, I have done this much already—and without me, even Master cannot do anything, and those proud people, I have driven out to the battlefield, to the front-line. I would drive out Mr. Kim and Mrs. Kim to the frontline to travel on the mobile teams—and if they failed to do that, I will have failed in this test. If you do that in reluctance you will have failed. To complain is of a satanic nature. You must expect a battle fiercer and more serious in the future. The more worthwhile the battle is, the more difficulty you must go through, and you must be grateful and proud of your being a warrior in this fight.

Do you know the reason for my having brought future leaders from the European nations, three from each nation? In the future, my plan is to drive out all the present leaders of those nations to the frontline on the worldwide level. That is sort of a promotion—to put them in a more difficult position. If they complain and say, "Well, I have done so much, well, why shouldn't I have a vacation; there is no leisure, nothing like that" and if they are reluctant to go out in the frontline on the wider level of things, they will have failed in the test. I hate the idea of their having to complain before me, a victor, after having gone through so much difficulty and am still fighting. Because I know what it is, because I have had the same experience—and you are going an easier way, after I have paved the way. So, from now on, at the conference or at a meeting, I will watch you, how you respond.

You may say, "Well, we have to apply the Democratic method, this is a Democratic world." But Satan is wise enough to know how to apply the Democratic form in corrupting the people. Since there is Satan all around us, if I am to announce my strategy before the world, will Satan let it alone? That is why, in the Bible, God would not reveal all that He had in mind. Those who were entitled to know that, He let know.

You can complain only when you are more than Master, when you know what he has in mind, and you can do what he can do; but otherwise, you keep quiet, keep silent and just obey me. That is the only way left for you. If you are in a position such that I must consult with you over any matter, why wouldn't I do that? I long to have such a person—I would sit up the whole night talking with him; but since you are not in this position quite yet, I will just give you orders. I have tested, I have tried to listen to your advice or proposals, but I have failed to find them more than mine or more than God's. So sometimes I have to ignore them.

We have to go beyond the obstacles by leaps and bounds, but whenever you are faced with war before you or an obstacle, you would complain, and you would become discouraged. Then, how can I be sympathetic with you on the individual basis in this final fight?

The human fall came about through envy and complaints, so we must go beyond complaint. Do you really understand what is Abel's path, the path of Abel? If and when you as Abel complain, can you make Cain one with you? No. Then our conclusion is that unless you, in Abel's position, should play the role of the offering or sacrifice, you cannot save or absorb those in Cain's position. The offerings on the altar have no complaints, and that is to be divided into two, and you are the living sacrifice before God. As in the case of Isaac, if Isaac at that time were disobedient and had objected to his father and said, "Oh, father," and had condemned his father and not let him cut him in two, would he or could he have become a wholesome offering to God? The lamb is the gentlest animal. If the Master were to pierce a sword into his neck, he would just baa and die. That is the gentlest animal, knowing no objection, no resistance. Time is nearing, but I must say this to you.

I, who am over 50, am here to fight for the whole world against Satan. But you are fighting for your own nation for the time being. In this case, can you complain in your battlefield? (No!) Those brothers and sisters of yours from the European nations are here, too—from England, from Germany, from France, from Austria, from Italy and elsewhere. Then you, 100, when you came from your nation, wanted to fight here because your nation will be endangered if the fight against Satan and the communist power here is lost. But I am here from an Asiatic nation; what have I to do with you in the worldly sense? But I am so very eager and enthusiastic to fight this battle and make this battle a victory, because I know all these things. While we are here, the people of the United States, the members of the United States are in the position of Abel; so you must not be defeated by the European brothers, and with you and the European brothers together you must not be defeated by the Asiatic brothers. You will never be, or you don't want to be defeated by the Japanese brothers. In other words, Japan—in light of the Providence centered on the United

States—is in the position of the formation stage, representing the formation stage; you from the nations of Europe are in the position of the growth stage; and you (U.S.) are in the position of the perfection stage—and you cannot be defeated by those two. Then, the European brothers should not be defeated by the Japanese brothers, and the brothers and sisters in the United States should not be defeated by the Europeans or by the Japanese. You are the host, in a word, and they are the guests; and in going through fasts, too, you must do more than they do; in going through difficulties, you must choose to go through more difficulties than they do. Am I right in saying that? (Yes!)

That means, I am going to put you American members into more difficulty. Are you ready for this? (Yes!) I am sure some will say, "Oh, back in Korea, I understand all the blessed women came back to their homes—and why not for us?" What would you do? Blessed women, they have been out in the front-line for three years and they are now back.

(I would like to stay out.)

You, you, too?

(I would like to stay out, too, but [something about her child] ...)

I have my own children, too. Now I am in the battlefield, and I miss my children; they are in difficulty. They are at times sick and troubled. and all those things are happening. During my, well, up until my second visit to the United States, and [my second] World Tour, I had written them as often as once a week, but then this time, I am not writing them at all. They would write me many letters, but I wouldn't answer their letters. There is a reason for me not doing that and for me being that way--I mean to be more faithful to the Great Cause. A little longer, and you can live with your own child; but, as time goes by with me, can you imagine...if I am going to visit so many nations where I have missionaries, even if I can, I may spend one month in each place; I can never spend a good portion of time with my children. I have to travel from place to place, visiting you. I am so fond of children, and I know, more than anyone else, I must love and embrace late President Eu's children, but I have never done that. There is a reason for that. Well, when I travel, I miss them, and when I go back, I will buy gifts for them, but in Korea I seldom do that. You don't know the reason for that. I am doing things in accordance with the Divine Principle and the way God would have me do them. As for late President Eu's children, I will leave them in the hands of the members—and only after the members love those children as they would their own children, can I love them and express my love toward them. Everything is done in a more-or-less reverse way. You don't know how you can go through the path of restoration, so it is wise for you to obey me. You must know that in Korea, too, even the blessed members would either complain or would not quite be willing to obey me—and they have their own opinions, and they think, "Well, it is too early for Master to do that, or it is too much for Master to have us do that." But, after a while my plan proved true, and they were humbled, and they have no face to lift before me. Do you understand what I mean? (Yes!)

Unless I have gone through all those difficulties, I cannot tell you to do this. I have experienced that, I have done my part, and I am still doing that. That is why I can tell you to do this; and for me, I have always thought that to complain to God, who is the most agonized, is somehow to betray Him. So, I have thought that to complain...instead of complaining before Him, I would rather choose to die. Because, by complaining, I am betraying Him—I am bloating the agonized heart. I would talk to myself and tell myself, "If you are going to complain against God, you must kill yourself." It is because, by complaining, by being envious, man fell in the beginning; and I hate the idea of even having a shade of complaint or envy. If I'm in that position. wouldn't you do the same?

Since you are blind to the fact, and you don't understand God's heart, God would have me tell you, teach you, until you know and understand God's heart. Those in the front-line, while they are in the battlefield, how can they complain? If they complain, the fight will be a defeat. Those who complain are apt to multiply that complaint; but if that person keeps on complaining, he will be isolated from the rest of the movement and be abandoned by God. You must be afraid of that. (To blessed sister) I understand your heart. I know what motherly love is; I know what parental love toward children is, more than you do. But do you understand God's heart, who is missing His lost children? Your child is not lost—he is safe and wholesome in your own home. You can see him at least from time to time, but God has lost His children and they are destined to hell, and a great number of people are groaning in hell, in darkness, and even though He would cry out to save the lost children, agonized in hell, He cannot reach out to the people, except through you. Do you understand? By your going through this experience, yourself, alone, you can understand God's heart all the more; and if with that mood, that kind of readiness in your mind, if you would shout to the people while you miss your child, all the more will you miss those people who are being destroyed. Then, you will be a forceful, convincing speaker, and you will bring peace to the hearts of the people.

In time of difficulty, I did not beg God to help me, but I comforted God's heart, because I knew that God was already there, agonized and worrying about me. So, I would comfort God and tell Him not to worry about me—and in the face of betrayal by one whom I had trusted for so long, then I would immediately think of God's heart, after the betrayal of the archangel and His own child, Adam. And I can comfort myself and I can even comfort God's heart, and I am revitalized and recruit my strength to go ahead. In that case, with more love than I have, God is more agonized (than I am) over the fact; so, I am not even in a position to be consoled or comforted by Him, but I am in a position to have to comfort His heart. Since I knew that God was already in more agony than myself, and He was more worried about things than myself, I, even in imprisonment, would console God and comfort Him and tell Him not to worry about me. I did not dream of getting comfort from Him. I know this is not a problem with just one person here but is everyone's question and problem. When I send out members to the front-line, putting them in charge of branch churches or over any village, then some would send letters to comfort me whenever they are faced with difficulty there. Because, by the same experience, they know my heart, they know God's heart, so

they would think, "If I am agonized with this much difficulty, how much more agonized must Master's heart be at this moment to take charge of the whole world." That is their attitude. With some other people, on the contrary, they are making God's heart more agonized and He has to worry about them. One who is grateful in the face of difficulty would feel like comforting my heart, even in the difficulty, because he knows that I am going through more difficulties if he is agonized with that small amount of difficulty. And then, if he is in that difficulty, God is already there, preparing and providing him with more means, paving the way and fighting for him and with him. If, on the contrary, you are sinking down and down into darkness...but for those people, you know, even the spirit world will be helping them; and in advance, the spirit world will reach out to the people and prepare those people for you to work with. And, when you visit the people, they will have seen you in a dream and have been told in a vision that you are coming. So, you can easily reach out to the people. Well, even in the world, Satanic world, if you are sacrificial and if you wouldn't care much about your own children and take care of all those children, would they not try to help your own children and love your children all the more? And your children are going to be loved by more people, including yourself. So, on the path of Abel, there is no such thing as complaint, nor dissatisfaction, nor discontent, because you are rewarded with more. There is only gratitude left, glorification. Are you that way? (Yes!)

What I am telling you is the truth, you must know that, and I have gone through the experience and my talk is based on my own experience. I love you dearly. Since I love you dearly, I don't want to put you in difficulty. But I am doing this, I am putting you in difficulty, because I want you to inherit the whole world. I want you to inherit the whole spirit world. Without your having set up even a small condition, you cannot inherit the future world. Even in the satanic world, the veterans who fought in World War II are respected and taken care of by the government and the people. Even if a person, a soldier on the way to the battlefield, were aboard a ship and were killed right there.... well, if he did not look backward thinking of his own home, but were headed for the battlefield ready to fight, then he, even though he may have to die on the ship going to the battlefield, would already be a victor. He is respected and cared for by the people. Do you understand that?

I don't expect you to do things in the best way, or to do the amount of work I have done—but I want your zeal, enthusiasm and loyalty to this cause. Would you reject that? (No!) So, what you are to do is to be grateful to God. Your way is already paved by me and you have only a short way to go, and after having gone through all those things, you will inherit what I have accomplished,

People blind to all this truth will be scornful of us, calling us foolish, because all the people in the world have not been able to realize the brotherhood of mankind and the establishment of the Kingdom of Heaven (and we are) but a handful of people. But, knowing what God's formula is and what God's cause is, in knowing that God is working through us and with us; we set out in search of the lost Kingdom, and we are going to build or erect the Kingdom of God, Heaven on

earth. You don't know in what way I am praying before God at Belvedere. I am not going to be indebted to you in any way. God knows you are becoming indebted to me. If I am going to be indebted to you, I cannot make this movement a success. This movement will be diminished, will become meager, if I do that. You don't really know what kind of person I am. I am a furiously impatient person in a way. In my boyhood, I could not bear the idea of being called names by anyone else. If I were beaten, I would not stay still. I would never be defeated by anyone else. There are many extreme dispositions in me and I am quite versatile. I am capable in many ways: in the athletic field, in the scientific field, in every walk of life. I could have become a success. I am not of dull brain. But, in the fight against Satan, can you imagine how many times I have been faced with such difficulty that I could not bear any more? During torture by Satan, in the scorn before him, how could I bear up in the face of those things? But I could persevere, because God is more agonized in the face of those difficulties before me. I knew God is a jealous God in a way; God is a God of wrath. He cannot tolerate all the injustice and unrighteousness; but if He were to exercise His wrath and justice, there would not be one single person left on earth. But He is anxious to restore the whole world; and He has had to persevere for such a long period of human history.

When I was so angry, so furious that I would want to take revenge against someone, I would bite my tongue until it bled and think back in my mind of what God has gone through in the face of such difficulties. So, I would feel like forgiving the person. And, after going through so much difficulty at one time, when the next difficulty would come, which was more than the previous one, I would say to myself, "I cannot stain what I have already accomplished, when I persevere and go beyond this obstacle, this difficulty, I will have won the victory for God—and I can persevere, I can bear this difficulty." I would do this for the Great Cause; and since I have done this much myself, you are respecting me, you are ready to follow me, you want to be given orders by me and you will be obedient to me. And, what else, other than me, could make you do that?

I have so many regrets, resentments, stored away in my innermost self, and there will come the time when God will tell me to take vengeance, to burst out my wrath and everything I have stored up within myself. I don't want to hasten the day, I don't want to have the day hastened, but I persevere more and more, and want to have it prolonged until the end. The more I become like that, the more God will be on my side already taking vengeance for me. My vengeance will be taken out in such a way; to love the people and absorb the people, defeat the people in that way—and if there be any God, I think that He has got to love me. If God does not love me, then there is no God—that is my thought. This is my path, and this is the path of Abel. Well, from the start, you must not have the attitude of going the road or doing things for your own sake, but for the sake of those in Cain's position, for the sake of the whole world, for the sake of God. And then, at the goal, when you have reached it, you will enjoy everything you have accomplished.

One thing more, I must add: if anyone is entitled to complain, I am the first one. I came to the world to carry out my mission, to be the True Parent to mankind. I came for that mission, but I had to accomplish all left unaccomplished by my predecessor—so I am still going through the

path of Abel, in order to show you how to go this path. When you think of that, you must feel indebted to me, and you cannot lift your face before me. You must be really humbled. You must be ashamed before me, saying to yourself, "Oh, Master, you should enjoy your rights; you have gone through too much difficulty for us and how and what on earth can make you go through more difficulties?" And you must pray to God, not to let me go through the difficulty any more. I am going through this difficult path in silence without complaining: I am not liable for that. I don't have to do that; still, I do this as an example to you. I am going this road in silence: but in the end, at the Judgement Seat, God will say something against you if you don't obey me. If you have not done your responsibility...at that time, before God, you will be ashamed. So, in order for me to keep you from shame, I am driving you out this hard. And I want you to know clearly what the path of Abel is, and I want you to dash forward on that road without hesitancy, and of your own accord, so that you will be praised by God, and you will be able to glorify Him in the end—and I want you to be a victor in the end.

The Lord of the Second Advent, the Messiah, is the completion of Adam, the Second Adam or the resurrection of Adam—and he is the resurrection and also the totalization of Adam, Noah, Abraham, Moses, Jacob and Jesus. He is the resurrection and totalization of those. He is the completion or success of those put together. He is going to restore their failure himself. If you really know that and understand that, you must be wise enough to cling to him and become one with him, and his will be yours and you will inherit all the things accomplished by him. Do you really understand that? (Yes!)

I am the Abel to you, and you are the Abel to the United States and the United States is the Abel to the Democratic world and the whole Democratic world put together will be in the position of Abel to the communist world. And with the whole world restored, the earth plane is in the position of Abel and the spirit world is in the position of Cain—and we can subjugate the world of Cain. And, with those tools put together, God will be liberated, regain His dominatorship. So, those who are in Abel's position are God's sons and daughters of filial piety, loyal subjects to God, sages who are saviors to the whole world. That is the path of Abel and that is what Abel is.

*The Path of Abel 3-4-73*



# **JACOB'S COURSE**

## **AND OUR LIFE OF FAITH**

---

Restoration through indemnity is the principle which guides our course in the life of faith. We have learned that we need an offering to make indemnity or restitution. The offering is a conditional object given to God in place of ourselves. In other words, the offering is an object external to ourselves, and we are the internal counterpart of the object. Those two, the offering and ourselves, must be united into one for us to advance in our life of faith.

Due to the fall, we cannot immediately reach the stage of perfection in the course of restoration through indemnity. We have to go through the three stages of formation, growth, and perfection before going beyond the level of perfection. In order for us to reach the final level, we have to offer sacrifices as indemnity conditions representing the growth stage and the perfection stage. To do this we must learn in what manner Jacob went through the three stages of formation, growth and perfection in his mission. This is an immediate question in our life of faith. Jacob's course is the same as the course of Moses, and Moses' course is parallel to the course of Jesus. Therefore, Jacob's course shows us the formula, or pattern, for the entire course of the providence of restoration.

The providential history of restoration under God is made up of the Old Testament Age, the New Testament Age, and the Completed Testament Age. The Old Testament Age was the time in which people offered sacrifices by using the things of creation as objects, while in the New Testament Age this was done through the children, with Jesus in the central position as the Son of God, and in the Completed Testament this is done through the parents. This means that first the things of creation, next the children, and finally the parents are put in the position of sacrifice in the providential history of restoration. Jacob's possessions, his children, and he together with his wife, were put in the position of sacrifice centering on Jacob.

In order for Jacob to become a central personage responsible for offering a sacrifice of providential significance, he had to go through a course of struggle to subjugate Esau. Esau was in the position representing the satanic world. Jacob represented God's side. Did Jacob as Abel become really one with Esau as his Cain, thus subjugating Satan completely? No! Originally, Jacob should have won the blessing in his native home in total harmony with Esau and not have to go to Haran. However, he had to escape from the danger brought about by Esau's intention to kill him. Thus, the condition of indemnity was not completed. Due to Esau's opposition, Jacob could not create the condition of harmony between Esau and himself before their parents. Therefore, he had to go to Haran and place his life on trial. At first, Jacob did not have anything to offer before God as a sacrifice in Haran. His possessions, after all, were Laban's and not his own. Jacob escaped from Esau, but there was still Laban who was another Esau in a position more external than Esau's.

Laban always acted as an obstacle to Jacob in the course of indemnity. Because Jacob had to go through these situations, his course is the model course which a man of faith must follow.

You are not in the position of having become one with your physical parents; you are now in the land of Haran, living in Laban's home. You can only hope to become really one with your parents when you have earned your own possessions to offer God. This is similar to Jacob's course of restoration. Since Jacob had nothing at all in his possession, he had to get things to offer to God from the satanic world; that is, from Laban. To do that, Jacob had to get help from God.

Then, how can we get help from God? Before wanting to be loved by God, we must prepare an offering of sacrifice for Him; then God will help us according to the condition we make. You are now in the position of having come to Haran after leaving your own homes. You have to have cooperation from God. What is the purpose of having cooperation from God? We must not make it our purpose to receive God's love, but we must get conditional objects to offer God to receive His cooperation. We are exactly in the same position as Jacob, but the age in which we live is different from that in which Jacob lived. Jacob was the central figure who was blessed with the heavenly heritage, and he did his very best in preparing an acceptable offering of sacrifice, with the hope that his mission on the national level would commence in accordance with God's will, centering on his family. In this age, we are situated not in the age of the family level providence, but in the national level.

Then, where and in what manner did Jacob have to set up a tradition of belief enabling him to receive God's blessing and protection? It may appear simple, but Jacob and the offering were not enough; there was something else needed. The offering was not for the sake of Jacob himself; he had to offer it for the sake of the Israelites and their nation which was the nation of God's choice. In other words, the sacrifice is something to be offered in order to make things of higher and wider dimension and more public nature, such as the family and nation, reach God and connect with Him. Whether or not you are strong in this idea can determine whether or not you receive God's blessing and cooperation. The more opposition and persecution Jacob received from Laban, the more he thought of his native home where he had to bring back what he could get from Laban. He did not want to merely enjoy his life in Haran with the blessings God had allowed him to have, but he desired to share his blessing with his brothers and parents back in his native home. This desire to share with his own family was the basis or beginning of his idea to love his own people and then the nation.

Jacob's primary desire should have been to share all the blessings he had with his brothers and parents, and thus to become harmonized in oneness with them. Jacob led the lonely life of a shepherd, but all during this time his ultimate purpose was not to gain money or the material blessing. He missed his native home, for he was highly blessed by God, being born into the family of Isaac, in the lineage of Abraham. He felt sorry for what he had done to his elder brother. He thought it was understandable for Esau to want to kill him when he had taken away the birthright

by cheating; and he was sympathetic with his brother. But what Jacob had that was acceptable as an offering to God was that the more difficult and lonely his situation became due to the aggravating persecution from Laban, the deeper attachment he felt towards his parents and brothers. This made him always wonder what he could do for their sake; this was the primary question. He thought that he could readily share with everybody at home what he had acquired by spending 21 long years of drudgery. If he felt the least bit self-centered, thinking that all the things he acquired belonged to him alone, Jacob could have ended his course in failure. This was the case because God blessed Jacob not for his own welfare and prosperity, but to have him lay the foundation on which all the Israelites could enjoy the blessing after he had organized the people by his own efforts. In other words, Jacob had to think in terms of public benefit in order to succeed. When he completed his 21-year course successfully, God blessed him with all the material wealth and all the other things necessary for his mission.

You know the details of the prolongation of his course from 7 years to 21 years. God blessed Jacob in his 21-year course to such an extent that even Laban became fearful of him, and wanted to prevent him from growing wealthier. As you well know, during his 3-day course Jacob stole all the things he needed. You know also that when Jacob was well on his way, Laban caught up with him and quarreled with him over the idol which he had stolen. If Leah, in sympathy with her father, had told him the truth about the idol, Jacob's 21-year course would have come to nothing. But Leah deceived her father, Laban. What is interesting here is that Leah cheated her father, and Jacob also cheated his father. If Leah and Jacob had both deceived their fathers for their own benefit, it would have been wrong. However, they did this for God and for His people, and we know that this is a necessary condition in the course of restoration. Leah was strictly on the side of Jacob. If Leah had cheated her own father, this would mean that she had become completely one with Jacob. In terms of becoming a God's-side family, we can define Jacob's family as one which history had never before seen. Leah was one with Jacob without becoming one with her father, Laban, and this made it possible for Jacob to remain the owner of all his possessions.

In Adam's family, Adam and Eve deceived their Father, God, for an evil purpose; in Jacob's course of restoration, Jacob and Leah deceived their satanic-side father, which was right in God's sight. If Leah had become one with Laban against God's will, all could have been nullified. Not only his possessions, but also his children could have become questionable as wholesome offerings to God. If Jacob and his wife had been separated, where would the children have gone? Surely, there would have been division among the children, too, some wanting to follow their father while others, their mother. If so, could the restoration of Cain and Abel have been completed on the family level at that time? No! Their possessions also, being not solely on God's side, could not have been acceptable to God. Therefore, the fact that Jacob and Leah had become one with each other was a historical event in the providence of God. By their becoming one, parents, children, and all things naturally became one, all three in complete unity before God. At this point, Jacob was able to offer the three great offerings, all in unity and harmony, making them acceptable to God.

In Jacob's offering of the sacrifice, another condition was necessary; that is, he had to excel Cain in many ways in order to offer an acceptable sacrifice to God. This is the fundamental principle in offering the sacrifice. In other words, Jacob had to offer the sacrifice in a way which would make it invulnerable to Satan's accusation. Satan is always accusing, so God can only accept the sacrifice of Abel if and when it excels that of Cain. Then, who is in the position of Cain? Esau was in the position of Cain to Jacob as Abel. Jacob and Esau are now struggling on the horizontal level, while God and Satan are doing the same on the vertical level. At this moment, Jacob's main thought should be so thorough as to think that he and his wife, his children, and all his possessions belong to God and not to him. All these things are in the position of sacrifices for the realization of God's will. Jacob was on the way home, but the question was how to solve the problem with Esau. At this moment, God was on the side of Jacob, while Satan was on the side of Esau. God and Satan were both anxious to find whether or not Jacob, as the central figure, would stand firmly with the central view of the providence of restoration, centered strictly on God, that is to say, whether Jacob would stand firmly in the position of Abel, or become trapped under satanic conditions. Both God and Satan concentrated their attention on that.

In offering the sacrifice, Jacob had to excel Esau, not only on the physical level, but on the spiritual level also; in other words, he had to subjugate Satan. On the way back home, he would pray at the ford of Jabbok desperately that God should help Esau to welcome him without being hostile to him, because he knew that if Esau was going to kill him, his mission would be a failure and dissipate. He knew that this way was not for himself as an individual, but for the restoration through indemnity for Adam's failure of being subjugated by the archangel. Therefore, Jacob had to first subjugate the archangel, who was in the position of Esau on the spiritual level, before being able to actually subjugate Esau on the physical level. Since Adam fell by being subjugated by the archangel, then the physical Esau was in the position of fallen Adam. In order to restore all the particulars through indemnity, Jacob had to restore on both levels, first subjugating the archangel. Therefore, he wrestled with the archangel at the ford of Jabbok all through the night for success on the spiritual level. In wrestling with the archangel, he had to risk all his possessions and his children, including himself and his wife all this he kept in mind as he wrestled.

What was the motivation and significance of the wrestling? If Jacob should be defeated in wrestling by the archangel, all his possessions, all his children, including himself and his wife, which should have been all unified into wholesome oneness, could have been taken away or torn into pieces by satanic hands. However, if he should win, all those things would belong to him and God. They fought all through the night until they were both exhausted, but the wrestling match was not over yet. How do you think the match went? They were not evenly matched all the way. There were times when Jacob was almost defeated. What do you think? Was it Jacob who fell more times or the archangel? It is understandable that Jacob fell more times, but he did not give up even though he faced death; he fought desperately to win over the archangel. He would cling to the archangel again and again at the risk of his life. That's what made him fierce. That's exactly what happens in our own course of life in faith. You are desperate to win over Satan, but Satan is

so fierce that you stumble over and over again. No matter how many times you may be on the verge of defeat, you will attack him again and again. The archangel, too, was in a difficult situation. He may have beaten Jacob, but he could not kill him, since he would be liable to judgment if he did. So, the archangel, too, was in a difficult situation.

In the meantime, dawn was breaking and the archangel knew that he had to leave Jacob at daybreak because the archangel belonged to darkness. So, just before dawn, he became desperate and broke Jacob's thigh. How do you think the archangel broke Jacob's thigh? He must have done this in a moment when Jacob was weak. If, at that moment, Jacob was not being defeated, he could not have done that. Still, Jacob could not give up. Even though his thigh was broken, Jacob could not give up. At the thought of loss he became even more furious, and attacked the angel again and again. He would rather lose his life in attacking than lose the battle.

At last, the archangel had to give in. At last, he could not but say to Jacob. "You have won the battle; you are the victor." He had to bless Jacob with the name "Israel" which meant "victor." All through human history, Jacob was the only one who wrestled with the archangel and was victorious over him. He well deserved the name of "the victor." That is how the word "Israel," which means "victor" came into being. You must know that in being victorious over the archangel, he battled at the risk of his life, and that you, too, in your life in faith, must fight against Satan at the risk of your lives. Jacob's subjugation of the angel on the spiritual level signified Jacob's reversal of the situation that occurred in the Garden of Eden, where our first human ancestors were subjugated by the archangel. However, Esau still remained to be subjugated. Adam fell by being subjugated by the archangel in the Garden of Eden. He himself fell into the position of the archangel (Satan) in substance. Now Jacob had to subjugate Esau who was in this position of the archangel in substance. In the Garden of Eden, Adam was in the position of having to think of God alone without a thought for himself. Jacob was in the position of Adam, and had to go beyond the level where Adam failed and fell. In what manner would Jacob carry this out? Jacob had to think only of God, His will, and His words, trusting that God, who had blessed him, would never betray him. Even though his brother, Esau, may have wanted to take revenge on him, he would have to have such strong faith as to never be defeated so he could stop his brother from taking his revenge.

Now Jacob was on his way home to meet his brother Esau. He could have gone somewhere else to enjoy his wealth if he did not think of God's will. He could have said, "Esau is Esau, and I am I; what have I to do with his life?" But his mind was so occupied with God's will that he wanted to meet his brother and reconcile the past and soothe his heart until his resentment vanished. What did he have to do in meeting his elder brother, Esau? First of all, he was ready to give up all his possessions, all his servants and his children, telling his brother that all these belonged to him. His attitude was, "All that I have is yours except God's will and God's blessing which is eternally mine." Adam, who ignored God's will, was self-centered, minding only himself, and lost his children and all things of God's blessing. On the contrary, Jacob was so God-centered that he would

give away all things for the will of God. This is what made Jacob different from Esau. Thus, on the family level, Jacob could wrestle with Esau and risk all that he had in his possession. Jacob would think to himself, "Esau, you cannot have all this wealth if you don't excel me in exalting God's will." He would challenge and deal with his brother with this attitude. He thought, "As long as you take these possessions of mine, it means that you are one with me and exalting God's will."

After receiving Jacob's gifts, Esau's heart melted. It was by receiving these gifts that the conditions were met, and Esau as the archangel in substance was subjugated in the same way that the archangel was subjugated spiritually by Jacob. By Esau's welcoming Jacob, the conditions of indemnity under God's will were fulfilled on the spot. If Jacob had not fought with the archangel and won over him beforehand, and had to fight against both Esau and the archangel at the same time, what would have happened? If he had to fight with both Esau and the archangel at the same time, wouldn't his wife and children and his servants have joined in the battle? Then the battle would have been fought on a larger scale. It was a great advantage for Jacob to have fought the two battles separately.

Thus, the two brothers who had hitherto felt resentment and hostility toward one another, embraced each other, shedding tears and blessing each other. A new era of Israeli history opened at this time on a higher dimension. There, Esau also shared in the blessing of being Israel, the victor. Jacob's course may look simple, but there is a historical meaning in it since all the things which had to be carried out under the providence of God were condensed in his course.

When we see Jacob's course and our course in the life of faith, there is a great similarity between the two. You are in the position of Jacob; you knew that God's blessing was yours, and with faith in the Divine Principle movement, you left your homes when you were faced with opposition and persecution from your parents and brothers. Those of you here whose parents and brothers oppose our movement, please hold up your hands. Almost all. Where will you go now? In fact, you cannot directly come here. That is, you are not entitled to be in this place. Could Jacob come directly to Father, God, after leaving his home? No! He had to go to Haran. You have to go to your own "Haran," namely, the world where you must experience drudgery and restore people and possessions. In Haran, Jacob was in the position of slave or servant to Laban, wasn't he? Laban would awaken him even in the middle of the night to go on an errand for him. He would say, "Come here!" and he had to come, or "Go there!" and he would have to go. Laban would call him names, kick him and do anything to him for 21 years in which he was under such drudgery. Would Laban have let him sleep when he was drowsy? When he was awakened from sleep, could Jacob retort to Laban and say, "I am sleepy, how dare you wake me up!" That could never happen. Awake or asleep, he had to comply with whatever he wanted. As a servant he was not allowed to eat at the table, but he had to eat in the kitchen. At Laban's call, he would have to stop eating right in the middle of his meal.

We can well imagine what a difficult situation he was in during the 7 years of drudgery. But just think, it was prolonged, for one reason and then another, until it finally became 21 years. From this point the 2,000 years of providential history after Jacob came about; that is, Jesus came two thousand years later, inheriting what was accomplished by Jacob. Two thousand years after the fall of Adam, Jacob came as the second Adam. By his course through 21 years of drudgery, he could restore through indemnity the lost 2,000 years of misery by lifting himself to the standard of Adam before the fall. Laban would promise Jacob something good, but he would break his promise to him as often as ten times. Laban's cheating Jacob 10 times has something to do with the significant number 10 which covers three levels each in the 3 stages of the formation, growth and perfection stages; and going beyond that, one more level to the number ten. The 3 major stages represent God's indirect dominion during which Satan can dominate, permitting Laban to cheat Jacob who was on God's side. If at that time Jacob had attacked Laban, he would not have paid indemnity to the end; he had to obey Laban despite all the hardships, persevering to the end. If Jacob had done something to Laban in wrath, his whole mission would have been nullified. The more Laban persecuted Jacob, the more his fortune would be diminished, and the more Jacob would be blessed with abundance.

Jacob strongly believed that God was on his side, and that Laban could never win over him. His strong faith was his life, and the secret with which he persevered. That was his main thought which made it possible for him to go through the 21 years of drudgery with success. This statement shows the extent of Jacob's confidence: "However hard you may oppose me, you are doomed to surrender and I will be the victor." We, too, must have this kind of faith, because God is on our side. By your joining the Divine Principle movement, this means that you have the promised blessing from God to possess the whole world under the condition of indemnity. That which belonged to Esau is now yours. The world is in the position of Esau to you as Jacob, because the world existed before you. You are blessed with the birthright by God. Then, how would you obtain these things? Just as in the case of Jacob, the blessing is already yours. Since the things of the world belong to you, why don't you go and get them yourselves? Frankly speaking, do you now possess material wealth and position? (No!) Do you have your brothers with you? (No!) You do not have these things because you left your home and you are on your way to Haran, or you are already in the land of Haran. Then, do you have your own parents? (No!) You are in the same shoes as Jacob

Suppose you say, "I want to go to God." But can you go directly to Him? You are empty-handed with nothing in your possession. That's not the way the man with the responsibility of restoration should be. God, our Father, lost everything in the world and is waiting there in grief for you to restore the world to Him. You cannot go straight to Him empty-handed. You can go only after having restored things. So, you are compelled to go into the satanic world and to fight against Satan to restore the people and the material out of his hands to be returned to God. Without doing this you will have nothing to offer to God, will you? Again, where are you destined to go? Yes, to the satanic world like Haran. Then, are you willing to go there? You are reluctant, I know, but you

have to go! You are sort of forced to go. Would you want to have material wealth? (Yes!) Then, go out! Would you want a wife; or would you want to have a husband? Then, go to Haran. Do you think that you can find your spouse by going to God? No, you must go to Haran to find your spouse. Before joining your spouse, without your parents, without your children, you have practically nothing.

If you follow your Master empty-handed, would that do? You cannot do that. I will kick you back. It is out of my love that I do this. I cannot leave you alone, because I know that if I do, you are going to die, in the spiritual sense. I must push you hard to make you go to Haran and get what is due to you, because only in that way are you going to have eternal life in God. It is the formula in the Unification Church that each and every member should go through the seven-year course. When it is prolonged you are apt to have to fulfill a 21-year course. If our members cannot fulfill that, the providential history may have to be prolonged another 2,000 years. If we cannot carry it out, it means that no one else can do it, and then it can never be done. We who know this must be very serious.

There is one thing of which we must be really fearful. What could this be? To be told not to witness to the people is the most horrible fate. Isn't that true? (Yes!) Then, are you willing to go out? (Yes!) You are going to Haran and it is the land of abundance, but in the beginning you will have to be servants to the people there. That's how restoration starts. In the course of restoration, you have to go through the stage of being a servant, the stage of adopted sonship, and then the stage of sonship to the True Parents. These are the 3 stages you must go through. Then you can put yourself in the position of the True Parents to your own descendants. Do you want to go through these stages step by step, or do you want to go by leaps going over the three stages and into the fourth one all at once? (By leaps!) You are greedy! Then, you have to work four times as hard. Can you do that? (Yes!)

Jacob went to Haran where he went through drudgery and untold misery and persecution; and on the way home, he had to fight the archangel and then he had to fight against his brother, Esau, to be really entitled to the blessing. Under Laban he suffered in agony on the physical level, while at home he suffered in agony with Esau on the spiritual level. In his battle at the ford of Jabbok with the archangel he suffered both spiritually and then physically. If Jacob had not been so well trained in Haran under the drudgery of Laban, he could not have won over the archangel at the ford of Jabbok- He knew that the resentment he accumulated during his 21 years of bitter life in Haran would only be dissolved by his being victorious over the archangel. That's what made him so strong as to not give in before the archangel, and to finally win over him. Only after subjugating the archangel could he share his blessing with his parents. Now Jacob was in the position to say to his parents, who were symbolically in the position of God, "Here are your Cain (Esau) and Abel (Jacob) completely restored. I have restored all the things lost by Cain and Abel in the beginning; here is the lost family of Adam restored to you." Then God's resentment will be



dissolved by the spoils brought by Jacob from the long struggles in Haran. He and his wife in the position of restored Adam and Eve could be dedicated to God. This is exactly what we have to do in the course of restoration. This is what Moses had to go through as well as Jesus, after the pattern of Jacob. We say that Jacob's course is Moses' course and Moses' course is Jesus' course. That means that Jesus' course is equal to Jacob's course. Now, do you have a clear picture of what your course is? When you go out to the land of Haran, you will be faced with opposition: opposition from children, adolescents, from young people, the middle-aged, and from aged persons. In the five types of people there are male and female in each group signifying 10 types of opposition, which corresponds to Laban's ten times of cheating Jacob. So, you must be ready to be persecuted and cheated at least 10 times by the people of Haran—even you own brother or sister in our movement!

By how many people was Jesus opposed? The basic number was 12—his 12 disciples opposed him in the end. The number 12 corresponds to the number 10 in the course of restoration, because in an event of providential significance, God and the Holy Spirit are always involved. In the song Arirang, Korean people sing that in love there are twelve hills to cross over. "I will cross over the hills to meet my lover." That's very symbolic; it's like a revelation. That means that in order to perfect our love, we have to go through at least 12 difficult situations. In order to complete our love in God, you must be able to placate 10 to 12 people opposing you. If this is your standard, we need people opposing us; and in this sense, Laban has done a good deed for Jacob. Even though it was out of jealousy that he persecuted Jacob, Laban's misconduct ultimately had the effect of helping Jacob to win the victory, even though Laban himself was unconscious of it. You must take rebuffs as a challenge, saying, "Come what may, this will make me the victor." When the second trial comes, you should do the same until you overcome it, even ten times or more. Your record will show 10 victories in the final analysis. Satan's opposition would result in helping God's will to be accomplished, if the opposition is overcome by God's people. For this reason, God allows Satan to oppose his people. We must know that when we closely examine the course of restoration, Satan, too, is being used by God in such a way that Satan will finally help God's man to be victorious by Satan's failure. Otherwise, God Himself has to give you a rebuff.

But according to the Principle, God cannot tempt you or put you into trial deliberately. To be tested is, in a way, a good thing. In school, the teacher would give you a test after teaching you certain material, wouldn't he? As I see it, the teachers play the role of both God and Satan. Is persecution good or bad? Success will be yours only when you know this exactly. Without knowing that, you cannot win over Satan in the trial. Then, would you rather have big trials or small ones? (Big!) In case there is no trial coming to you, what would you do? Then, you must arouse trials, that is, you must work so vigorously as to arouse persecution. For instance, you visit a village, it may be quiet, but once you go there, the whole village will be stirred up. Then, division is apt to be created in that village, with some coming to persecute you while some come to support you. When do you think the persecution will end? When you have won over the last one.

Your Master is ready to go through persecution even now. Even though the whole of the United States may oppose me, they cannot kill me; I will survive all the trials, and the United States will be ours. It's something like Jacob fighting against the archangel at the risk of his life. If the United States should kill me, she is liable to judgment. So, we must have Jacob's steadfastness and perseverance. We must have the attitude of, "You cannot go without blessing me." We are exactly in the position of Jacob, aren't we? We have nothing to be afraid of. Since we are going to do things for the sake of God and the United States, we can do just about anything, and everything will come to us. Are you like that? These are not words fabricated by man; it is the word of God. I am conveying this to you since I have put it into practice myself. After the Korean liberation from the Japanese regime, it took me twenty years to indemnify the 2,000 years of history from Adam to Jacob. If it had not been for the persecution from the Christian people, the same thing could have been done much earlier without having to go through three seven-year courses. My twenty year course is from 1960 to 1980. By the year 1980 we will have won the Christian world. Entering the year 2,000, it is going to be the Unification Church Age. That is, our movement will have to cover the whole world.

We must know that by the year 1980 we must win the whole Christian world and influence the democratic world. We are now in preparation for that. We have only 7 years left. By uniting the democratic world with our ideology we have to fight against the communist world in the final battle. By that time, the Abel on the world-wide level will have to conquer Cain on the world-wide level. Here, again our mission is exactly like Jacob's. Then, who is in the position of Cain to the Unification Church? The whole Christian world is Cain to us because it is the position of the archangel on the spiritual level, while the communist world is in the position of the archangel or Satan, on the substantial level. When we win the Christian world, the problem of the communist world will be of no consequence.

We are now at the ford of Jabbok fighting against the archangel. We have to inherit the blessing of God from the Christian world. Those who are in the position of the archangel have got to bless us as the victors. The democratic world is based on the Christian cultural sphere. So, if we, by winning the victory in the Christian cultural sphere, should inherit the blessing from that, then we can start our mission to fight against the satanic world. If the Christian world will become entirely one with us, just as Esau came to a willing surrender before Jacob, then the Communist world will be no problem at all. I must be able to say before God, "I have restored the lost wife, the lost family, the lost nation, and I have restored the lost world." Only after having restored all these things can the kingdom of God be started. Isn't it true? It's exactly what should be done.

You, as my disciples, must follow my way; that is, you, too, must follow the way of Jacob on the individual level, on the family level, national level and worldwide level. You are now going into the land of Haran in order to witness to the people and to do many other things. What are you going to get there? You must get your wife, your children and material wealth. Would you want to have all those things? (Yes!) If you are going to be frustrated in persecution, there will be

nothing left. Would it be difficult for you to persevere for seven years while Jacob persevered 21 years? What about 21 years? There should be no question about it. That's nothing compared to the difficulties I had to go through. If you don't survive these difficulties, you are going to be like dead people even though you are alive. If you have to die in the spiritual sense, then what will be left there? Nothing will be left.

Knowing all this, you must be desperate. You may think, "After three years in the Unification Church, I am going to be entitled to the blessing of marriage. "Originally you are going to be restored only after restoring yourself, your children, and your nation with its material wealth. Only by Cain and Abel becoming one are you in the position to restore Adam and Eve enabling both brothers and sisters to come before the parents. God is in the position of parents. Due to the human fall. He lost His children and the material wealth which would have been under the children's dominion. Their relationship with their parents was cut off. Only when Cain and Abel become one, can they return to their parents and be blessed in marriage by them. That's the Principle.

Have you done that much? You have still a long way to go. But after joining the Unification Church, you set your eyes on each other looking for a mate, and that is not right. Only after having brought in 3 or more spiritual children can you be blessed. Only after having returned 3 times as many material possessions as you used to enjoy in the world, can you enjoy the possessions in the movement. But as soon as you join the Unification Family, you feel you are free to choose your mate and free to have food, clothing and shelter. That's the wrong idea; it is against the Principle. Isn't that true? When you live in the church, if you don't witness to the people and restore the material for the church, you are parasites. If you don't bring in spiritual children and want to get blessed in marriage, you are thieves. After you have returned all those things to God, God will give them back to you saying, "These are your children, this wealth belongs to you, so enjoy it all." If you don't return these things to God, though He would want to give you everything, He would be empty-handed. But if you have gained these things, then you, too, will have something to give to your children. That is the Principle. Jesus should also have fulfilled this, since it was part of his mission.

After you restore three spiritual children and material wealth, God will bless you, and later your spiritual children will receive the blessing after you have raised them wholesomely to meet the standard. Your spiritual children, in turn, must fulfill their position of responsibility and bring three spiritual children, each having restored their material possessions. Have you done your part? If not, are you ready to fulfill your part? (Yes!) For whom are you going to fulfill your responsibility? (For you!) No, not for me; you are going to do that for your own sakes. You may say, "I am doing this because I am told to do this by Master; so I am doing this for him." Or you may say, "I am doing this because it is God's will; then, am I not doing this for God's sake?" Not at all. You are doing all this for your own sake. You are taking advantage of what I have

accomplished and enjoying it as yours. You are working on the foundation I have laid with hard labor, and you are greatly indebted to me; so, can you say you are working for my sake?

You are indebted to God for His 6,000 years toil. Can you say that you are doing things for the sake of God? Knowing this, I would pray before God even in untold difficulty "Father, don't worry about me, I can take care of myself. I will carry out my mission." Then, can you complain to God for seemingly not helping you? Out in the front-line, can you complain against me saying, "Oh, Master, why have you sent me to such a remote place, where I have to meet with such difficulty?" Can you say that? What I have gained in 10 years' battle in Korea is going to be inherited by you, just as a new branch is engrafted to the tree rooted in this soil of the United States. Can you still complain? Witnessing is, after all, for your own sake! It is your mission to restore the nation; it is your mission to restore the world. Because of the human fall, all humanity has to go through the same way. So, it is also your way.

You are suppose to go through the stages step by step, but you are now already standing on the level of the nation-wide foundation which I have laid for you. One more step and you will reach the world-wide level of restoration. Still, can you complain? The ten-year-old wholesome true olive tree is here in the American soil for you to be engrafted to as the branches. Can the branches grow without the trunk and root? The branches can have life because of the trunk and its roots. You are indebted to the wholesome tree; you must be grateful for that. When you go to the spirit world you will know everything clearly and you will be eternally grateful both to God and your Master. Wouldn't that be true? This is not my fabricated word I am telling you, but it is the truth. Here in the United States, I want to give out my life power to you as the branches, so that you will grow wholesomely and thrive to cover the whole world. Are you willing to become branches of world-wide value or not? Then you must be positive in carrying out your mission. Isn't that true? Then, you must go through hardships more than any other nations in the world in order to make our mission a success in the nearest possible future.

Now that you know this theory, I am sure that it is clear to you that our Principle and our course in the life of faith really conform with each other, although it may have been vague to you until now. We must clearly understand that Master has been treading on the road step by step. Do you know what I mean? Again, I must remind you of the fact that Jacob restored his family's material wealth in Haran, and on the way back home he wrestled with the archangel and won over him; then back at home he could subjugate Esau. Seen from our viewpoint, Haran is the world whereas the archangel is Christianity and Esau the Communist world. In subjugating all these things, we must restore the whole world back to God. Can you imagine how impatient and busy I have been during the 21-year course? Now you must feel the same and do the same. We must be united into a strong oneness in the joint effort. If there is a division here, how sad our Heavenly Father will be.

Suppose your father is in Haran under persecution by the people around him; his children, too, are hated by the people. They must be strongly united into one in the face of such difficulties. If the children are divided among themselves, their power will be weakened. Isn't that true? You, children of God, must be one with each other; then you must become one with me. You must go through the hardships in Haran and having subjugated Christianity on the spiritual level, you must be able to establish the earthly kingdom of God. What is left before us is the great world-wide task of consistently connecting all the success we've gotten stage by stage with the course of 21 years. By that time, no power in the whole world will oppose us.

The world is now rapidly declining into ruin. It will so happen that we are going to rise, while the Christian world will fall, rapidly declining; ultimately, the Communist world will collapse. By the year 1980 there will be radical changes in the whole world. Why? The changes have the significance of making the world go in accordance with God's will and ours.

This is something similar to the course of the Israelites for the restoration of Canaan. The existing Christian world is the first-born, and it is in the position of the first Israelites in the wilderness, while our group is the second born and in the position of the second Israelites. We are in the position of Jacob's descendants entering the land of Canaan with all the blessings inherited from their fathers.

The more actively we work, the more swiftly the Christian world will collapse in corruption. What they have achieved, if anything, will be inherited to us. We have many young members in our church; the majority of them are under 30 years of age. Each of you is like Jesus or Jacob in resurrection; you are trying to fulfill what was left unfulfilled by them. You are in the position of Jesus before the age of 30, inheriting his mission at that point to make it a total success. That's why we must have many young members. Most of our members are under 30—in their twenties. In recent letters from Japan, we have learned that many teenager are coming into our church; this is in accordance with the Principle. What is happening in our movement is totally opposite from that which is taking place in the established churches. We don't have many old people here, while in other churches the contrary is true, since the Christian people have not been able to carry out their mission in the providential history of restoration. Do you understand?

We are going to fulfill all these things, but we have the seven tribes of the Canaanites to fight against. These signify the Communist satellite nations. How many satellite nations are there? About 12 now aren't there? The number has multiplied. If the number of the satellite nations becomes more than 12, they are doomed to decline. The communist leaders in Russia have been Marx, Lenin, Stalin, Malenkov, Bulganin, Khrushchev, and Brezhnev. They are now on the very highest peak; they cannot go beyond this level. From the eighth leader, or possibly up to the tenth, they are doomed to decline. However, since the number eight is the number of restart on God's side, our side will go upward, fighting a significant battle from 1960 to 1977. Beyond 1980 we will reach a certain peak. From this time, our road will be smooth. When it is examined closely,

world history goes in accordance with God's will and the Principle. That is the proof that God exists, and that He loves humanity. Communism started in the year 1917. So, 1977 will be their 60th year. Since the number 60 signifies satanic fulfillment, from this year on, the satanic sovereignty over the world will be taken away. However, they will not fall away easily but will desperately fight in a last-ditch attempt to keep their power. So, the year 1977 will be the most crucial year in the history of the United States.

Now, let us come to the conclusion. Jacob's course was of historical significance which is connected to us and inherited by us on the world-wide level. We must be ready to pay the toll of indemnity for the restoration of the whole world. Then, our mission is greater than his or Jesus'. Jesus' course was three years of public ministry. Centered on this, in order for us to indemnify those years, each of us must have at least 3 years of service before being blessed. Jesus left unaccomplished the restoration of the family, the nation, and the world on the physical level, so we, as their heirs, must fulfill those things both on the physical and spiritual levels. Jacob's 7-year course was the fundamental number of providential significance which Jesus would have gone through if he hadn't died. So, it is desirable for us to be ready to go through a 7-year course, but if we have not fulfilled our mission within that time, we should be ready to go through a second or even a third 7 years.

*Jacob's Course and Our Life In Faith 5-27-73*

# THE 25<sup>th</sup> YEAR

## OF THE UNIFICATION CHURCH

---

Those of you who are 24 can perhaps feel the meaning of the fact that the Unification Church was born 24 years ago. The age bracket of people coming to the Unification Church now is generally seven years above or below this age. This birth of the Unification Church is a great historical event in the 6,000 years of human history. Unfortunately, most of you don't have some deep feeling about this.

Looking back, we see that the 1960's were years when America's authority and power were supreme, especially in the free world. Now in the 1970's, however, we see that it is declining. Why is this happening? It is happening in conjunction with the decline of Christianity. Even though the leaders of world Christianity are aware of this, they don't know how to recover the situation. This is the status of Christendom at the moment. The degree of decline is so severe that even though people search for God and believe in Jesus as their Savior, God's spirit is still not found in the churches at this time. The great theological question is: after God raised up this great Christian foundation, why can't we find much of the former spirit remaining? This is a very serious problem.

God loves this world and that's why He made such a great investment in Christianity, but now decline is setting in. Has God abandoned the world in order to save it? Has He ended all His dispensational plans? No, not at all. Then why the decline of Christianity? Let's take an example from an orchard: if the orchard's owner sees that all the trees are in trouble, he undertakes a pruning process in order to save them. God has concluded that His original plan to save all the world through Christianity won't work. Therefore, He has to cut away the sick branches to encourage the healthy ones. The owner of the orchard will not favor the old branches but will encourage the new buds and branches and leaves.

To save the whole world it is logical from God's point of view that He must prune Christendom because it has become ineffective. God needs a new religious movement springing from the Christian lineage that will have the mission of saving the whole orchard. What kind of religious movement will He use in place of the declining Christianity? Because you are Moonies you think He will use the Unification Church.

That new movement must meet certain criteria and possess some qualification to be used by God. From God's point of view this kind of movement should have some content which is able to solve the problems that past religions could not. The most difficult problem is that men and women in this world do not meet the high standard of God's original creation.

What is the meaning of man and woman? They are different in function so how can they be united? They can only be united when they center their lives on the family; they cannot be

centered on just themselves. You must know that from God's point of view the most serious problem is that of the family. Americans possess much power and money and knowledge, but they suffer from the fundamental problem of instability in their families. Man's problem, both philosophically and theologically, is how to unite centering on the family system. Sociologically speaking, American families have many problems with divorce, ethics and delinquency. These problems must be solved by religion, but until now religion has failed to do this.

America is representative of Christianity, but what has happened that Christianity is not able to solve these problems? Who made this nation? Should a nation be formed through harmony or discord? Why are so many nations fighting, and why are there so many nations in the world instead of just one? Fighting only results in division. If within a nation the king and queen fight with each other, the whole nation will be divided.

America won its independence from England by fighting. Since then, this country has honored George Washington as a great patriot, but from England's point of view he was a traitor. From England's point of view, you Americans are radicals and betrayers. Is that proper logic?

There is much division among nations because people are egocentric. From God's point of view, He is not really God of this earth. He sees that all nations originated within an environment of immorality, conflict, and disharmony, and have nothing to do with Himself. The new religious movement which God is seeking should have the content that will enable it to solve the problems of conflict among the nations.

Why are there so many Christian denominations when Christians all claim one savior? They split apart because each denomination insisted on its own theory and logic. All of these churches are false when compared to the one true body which Christianity should be. This is a second great problem to solve.

The third problem is finding a worldwide solution for the division of races. We can predict that a final showdown must come between blacks and whites and other races as their relations worsen. War is the inevitable outcome unless a religious solution is found. Ideological and philosophical solutions will only further divide the races because each ideology will insist on its own solution. At this moment what kind of ideology can neutralize this kind of problem? Communism is actually trying to promote division and conflict between the races.

Soon, not only racial conflict but conflict between the different religions will begin to appear. Hinduism and Buddhism influence primarily the Oriental peoples, while Islam is dominant among the Arabs, and so forth. There is a possibility of collision between these world religions.

Communist strategy for the future is to take a more active role in nullifying religion, letting Islam, Christianity and Judaism each fight among themselves, as well as with all others. If this occurs then the human race faces annihilation. Through promoting division among peoples and



religions, the communists want to benefit their own purposes. God's new religious movement should have the content which can unite not only these diverse religions but even draw together people who follow the different ideologies, such as communism and democracy. If God does exist, then He would reason this way, but He also needs someone on earth to pursue this thinking.

How do we solve the problem of division between nations, races, ideologies, and religions? All of these should be dealt with in proper order. If any religious movement has the necessary content then God can feel hope. Only such a substantial movement could succeed in fulfilling His dispensation. A diagnosis needs to be made of the world's problem, the nation's problem, religion's problem, the racial problem, ideological problem, and the family's problem. All levels of society need a spiritual doctor.

All these problems started when man went in the wrong direction in the beginning. From that time everything has been going in a direction opposite to God's point of view. How can we turn the right side to the left side and vice versa? We have to go against the old established desires. The whole problem is one of changing the direction of the "I"-centered family, "I"-centered nation and "I"-centered religion and world. We have to go the opposite way and live the family life for the nation, the national life for the world and dedicate the world to God. The present way of living in the world must be completely turned upside down. "I must live for the world, not for "my" sake. Judaism should exist for Islam and Islam for Judaism. Christianity should live for Buddhism and so forth. This is the opposite direction.

Without going opposite its present direction there is no chance for the world to go in God's direction. The first step is to insist on this logic. Usually, families center on themselves with the husbands insisting that their wives love them most and wives insisting that their husbands love them most, and with neither feeling obligated to give love. That kind of selfish instinct prevails instead of a striving to love one another. The formula of loving one another really works. When this is applied, a small unit is formed, and that small unit will turn the world upside down.

The religion God needs should not only have content in word but also in practice. This real unit of husband and wife should be lived, for instance, and this content should be able to bring harmony among other religions in the same way. Even though nations have fought in the past, they too should be able to work together. Men and women from different nationalities should marry and love each other, and even a God-denying ideology like communism should be able to make unity with democracy.

If God exists, He will support this kind of movement. God is the king of wisdom, so if a new religious movement of this caliber emerges on earth God will cut away all the dead branches in the orchard to allow these new branches to grow. Would you like to visit the orchard where this kind of revolution is taking place? You don't mind seeing black and white people living together? We don't care about color because God is color-blind. In the world of that religion no one would

care about wonderful homes or about luxury and wealth. Even a hut would be a heavenly dwelling in that world.

Where can we find that kind of place? Does the Unification movement have this kind of heavenly qualification? You don't even have chairs to sit on and so you must be crazy people. You wouldn't mind even if you were sitting on ice on the river? You are Moonies, though, and Moonies are crazy people. In Korean the word which means "crazy" also means "having reached perfection." You have been everywhere else looking for an ideology to follow, but you could not find hope, no matter where you looked. You were lost because you were never satisfied, but now that you have found this religious movement you have found a place to drop anchor.

All people come to the Unification hospital to be cured as individuals and families in order to solve the world's problems. You are here as heavenly patients. Did you come here to help me or to be a burden to me? It is nice that you say you are here to help me, but still you are patients and until you are healed you cannot help the doctor. When will you get well and leave the hospital? How do you know when you are healed? There is a checklist. You are in good shape when you feel that you don't like the old individual self and philosophy. You frequently remember the fun you had when you were dating, right? You don't reject all that? If you repent of that even in your dreams then you are healed, but if you still wander and fondly recollect all that, you are not out of the hospital yet.

You should know where you are. You still need a prescription. When you are witnessing and meet beautiful women or handsome men and are captivated by them then you are not well yet. Be honest! You should be immunized so that you are not swayed by all those old standards. A handsome man who joins our movement must be immunized so he will not be influenced by a beautiful woman who tries to seduce him. Don't you still have a tendency to be influenced by the opposite sex? If you still yearn for the past, then you have yet to be healed. Some people feel the Unification movement is too strictly disciplined and they would rather be more individualistic, but they are still patients.

We want to abolish all those wrong attitudes. When you can get rid of everything from the past you can emerge as a new individual and a new nation. I have been everywhere in the world and I know there is no place like a Unification home. If God can find a heavenly orchard in the Unification movement, He must support it because this movement will be the answer for the individual's troubles, as well as the problems of the world throughout history.

The heavenly orchard has a good owner in Heavenly Father and even during storms, struggle, and persecution it will grow. We welcome all of that. Even though this big nation of America may be trying to squelch me, we will continue to grow. Though the whole world persecutes us, we will still live and expand because we have a heavenly owner. Think of it--in twenty-five years this work has expanded to the worldwide level and the whole world is being

stirred up. Without God's support, however, no amount of manpower could have accomplished that. The expansion and success of this movement come only from the support of God.

You who are inside the movement don't always know about all the turmoil and excitement being stirred up throughout the world, but from the world's point of view this is one of the most magnificent events in history. The communist powers are always trying to find out where I am and what I am doing. The world is amazed to see the big nation of America being influenced by one person—Reverend Moon. If President Carter's son knew the contents of the Divine Principle, he would leave the White House to come live at the World Mission Center. Even sons and daughters of U.S. officials in the State Department and Defense Department will come. This is the most magnificent, powerful event in history. Suppose the sons and daughters of God who were already living on earth were to hear the Principle; they too would have to come just like you have. This Unification movement should have welcomed the sons and daughters of kings and queens and presidents and world rulers, but you have come instead.

By now you know that the Unification movement is definitely on the righteous side. Are we going to save the family or the nation? Are you trying to save the individual or the family? Is the Unification movement here to save the family or the nation? Are we here for the nation or the whole world? Are we here to save the world or the cosmos? Are we here for the cosmos or God? How can you save God if He is already omniscient and omnipotent, unchanging, and unique? It is because of love, which God does not have, that even you can save God. God cannot love by Himself because He needs an object; He needs you. Do you have true love?

We have to liberate God with true love. Even if a handsome person like me came along but I lacked true love, I would have no meaning or value. A man with great knowledge and power is nothing if he lacks true love. A deformed cripple with nothing of worldly value has the greatest value if he has true love. Would God lift up false love which was impoverished? Do you Moon people look wonderful or ugly? You are miserable people because you come here all sleepy and poor, right? In the physical sense you are poor. Sometimes your faces are ugly, but nevertheless, inside you have true love and even though you look ugly, Heavenly Father must come to you.

If you understand this principle then you have everything, so let's stop here. Which is more beneficial, having steak for breakfast every day, or listening to my talks like this? By listening to the heavenly truth your true love is budding like the trees. When you listen to the words of resurrection your old self fades away and you begin to realize you have to love other people. Now the black people here are thinking about marrying white people if God asks them to do so, and vice versa.

What is the nature of true love? Can true love be found when a white man loves a black woman and a black man loves a white woman? Or is true love found only white to white and black to black? Even a small child could tell where true love can be found after hearing this message. What else does true love contain? Is love found only between Americans or between communists?

From God Jesus inherited the ideology of loving one's enemies, the greatest proclamation of true love. Do we have many opponents? We don't regard the people who oppose us as our enemies, however. Our ideology is based on true love, and with it we will make a family, tribe, nation and whole world, and then at last we will make God the True Father of all mankind.

I want to give you an analogy. You are each a tree in the orchard encompassed by a strong fence which keeps outside influence away. Each one of you is growing, with new leaves and twigs and blossoms emerging. When people outside the fence see your fruit, they will climb the fence to get it for free. I foresee this happening. Many people say they don't like me, but they like you people. That is strange logic! If you people are good, then I should be the same. These people are contradicting themselves. If I am bad, then certainly you would be bad. I have a different interpretation of this: if they like you but not me then it means that inside they know who I am but are pretending otherwise in order to protect their image.

You men and women should be practical people in order to provide whatever the world needs. I want you to be people who are needed by the world 24 hours a day. The time will come when people will want to spend time with you and even want to marry you. Past history has confirmed what I am saying to you this morning. Since 1960 I have blessed many couples in Korea.

When Mother and I first blessed those couples, their parents protested and were hostile, but now the parents admire me, and other parents come to our Church to ask for a wonderful husband or wife for their child. Now they respect our Church. Those people who criticized us in the past are now saying that our Church is wonderful.

Now our blessed couples are so influential in their communities in Korea that their neighbors are telling their children to follow the example of those couples. Many people come to observe how our couples relate to each other and how a Divine Principle family lives. When you look at all this empirical data, do you think I have done a good job?

In America it is common to get married at least twice, but are you going to come to me more than once for blessing? American parents accuse me of turning their children away from them, but many of you were practicing free sex and were hooked on drugs. All I did was give you spiritual medicine to renovate and restore you, even while I was being criticized. I don't care about criticism, however, because pretty soon these parents will come and thank me, just as parents did in Korea.

Looking back twenty years over my work around the world, I know that I have always been concentrating on the heavenly family. The ideal of God's creation is restoration of the four-position foundation, with husband and wife loving each other centering on the family. The children should love their parents centering on this family. The whole nation is composed of families, and always our families represent this nation. You have to think that our Unification family represents not only the nation but the whole world and the spirit world in the past, present and future. We have

to live by the heavenly constitution, which is the law of the garden of Eden that God planned for Adam and Eve.

Adam and Eve's family was supposed to be representative of the whole world, and centering on God that family was supposed to be the direct channel of divine love from God. Through this kind of love woven from four directions, including heaven and earth, that four position foundation should have been formed without any fall. The restored family is such that the whole nation and world will follow after that pattern and God's love will dwell there. This is the goal we must give all our effort to fulfill. The Kingdom of Heaven shall begin when this kind of family exists and will center on this dwelling of God's love. Based on the family which is centered on divine love, the nation and the world will be the nation and the world of divine love.

You women are the fruit of all women in spirit world, all women in the present world, and representative of all women in the generations to come. You men should see your wives in that light. You women should have the divine love to represent these three levels. You have to think that you are the channel to distribute this love to the nation, world, and all womankind. You are also the channel of love going back to God. This whole circuit will be formed centering on you. Do you understand?

God doesn't like to see Japanese talking only to Japanese or Americans only to Americans. The Unification movement is focused beyond the nation or race. You have to expand your hearts, and instead of centering on your own nationality you have to practice this love on the worldwide level. Even having deformities doesn't matter here. If individuals are dwelling in divine love, this movement will expand as the channel of divine love and create the Kingdom of Heaven, which is the place where true love dwells all the time.

There is a principle through which all development takes place. I have always lived by that law, working through the decades to build families centering in that law. I love not only Koreans but Japanese, Americans and all the nationalities around the world. All of these must be connected centering on the True Parents.

Before 1960 I had to restore three blessed families, three sons representing Adam's family and Noah's family. After selecting these three families I could receive heavenly matrimony myself. You know that there was a fight between Cain and Abel on the individual level; they had disunity and one of them killed the other. We, however, must unite. I have to patch up all of this in restoration, so in this time the families must love one another. Initially, I blessed three particular types of people who had personalities which made it difficult for them to unite. One of those was Won Pil Kim, another was Mr. Eu, who is now in spirit world, and the third, Young Whi Kim. They were incompatible but I made them come together in harmony. Through fulfilling this task, I could restore the position of Adam and Eve's family.

Noah's family had eight members. Therefore, Mr. Kim, Mr. Eu, Mr. Kim and their wives, and Mother and I represented those eight people and restored that situation. All of that took place in the year of 1960. After the engagement ceremony, I blessed three families, and after that the True Parents' marriage ceremony took place. By the lunar calendar we celebrate March 16, 1960 as the day True Parents received heavenly matrimony. Then on April 1, by the lunar calendar, the first Parents' Day could be established and restoration for the true family began.

Next came the 36-family blessing, which was restoration of the ten generations encompassed by Adam's and Noah's families, which totals twelve by including Adam's generation and Noah's children. Since it was necessary to recover everything lost by these generations, I had to restore this particular number through the blessed families. The 36 couples also represent Adam's, Noah's and Jacob's families. One group was made up of couples previously married in the secular world, and a second group of men who had previously had some physical relationships, and the third group of men and women who were pure. Each of these situations can be found in the world, and thus these couples represented all families in the world, as well as the families in restoration which were lost.

Because of the loss of divine love, everything has to be restored in reverse. Because of the fall there has been no relationship between spirit world and Adam's family, but through the blessings the spirit world and the physical world could be connected. This age is equivalent to the Completed Testament age, and therefore, the entire cosmos must be represented in the recovery of true love. From heaven to earth, all the lost ancestors centering on God's will must be restored centering on the family, and by May 15, 1961, I accomplished all this. May is a very victorious month.

I had to recover many other things lost by the fall. The problem has always been disunity within the family. Cain and Abel were not united, so we must see Cain and Abel unite, restoring that lost condition. Jesus gathered twelve disciples representing three generations. Centering on Israel, Jesus was supposed to expand his work onto the world level, but he could not. Jesus had 72 apostles, as well as the 12 disciples. In different places, the Bible records either 72 or 70 apostles. The twelve tribes of Israel had six tribal leaders each, making a total of 72; therefore, Jesus needed 72 apostles, not 70. Because Jesus could not fulfill this, I had to restore it and in this way link the past and present worlds.

There is a problem of making unity among Cain and Abel groups. In the blessing of the 72 couples, unity between two groups was important, with one group of 36 couples representing Cain and the other Abel. Resurrected children have been born to both the 36 and the 72 couples, and thus the heavenly nation is represented centering on Adam and Eve's family with restored Cain and Abel.

Since Jesus' resurrection, the number 120 represents the whole world. I next blessed 120 couples plus four additional couples, representing the four positions of East and West, North and

South. This totaled 124 couples, and they encompass up and down, front and rear, right and left. I intentionally included broken families from the world in this blessing because they will open the door for those now living in hell. The 36 families represent the national level of restoration, on the foundation of the three restored couples. By adding the 120 families, worldwide restoration of families is accomplished.

I set up representative couples for the whole world and spirit world. Whatever I did influenced events in the nation and world, and the membership of the United Nations at that time was 124 nations. In this way Korea was connected spiritually to the whole world.

The next stage was to unite couples on the world level. This was the 430-couple blessing. The Hebrews left Egypt after 430 years of bondage, and also at the time of this particular blessing the Korean nation had completed 4,300 years of history. These levels coincided. 1967 was the year equivalent to the 430 years before the Israelites left Egypt and the 4,300 years of Korean history. Through this blessing these two historical eras were linked for the purpose of God's dispensation. Time, a central figure, and a condition are necessary in restoration, and with this blessing I entered the world-level Canaan.

The 430 couples included couples from a much wider scope than before. All the couples through the 120 blessing were of one direction; in restoration it is necessary to be connected with all four directions and this is the reason the 430 couples came from all different backgrounds. Further, the 400 years of bondage in Egypt plus Jesus' age of 30 forms the indemnity number of 430. The number is always very important, and this number concerns conditions that Jesus should have established.

The years of Babylonian captivity are paralleled by the number 70, which equal forty plus thirty. This forty plus thirty represents totality. Through these vertical and horizontal connections all Koreans have the possibility to be saved through faith in the True Parents. The door is open, and even if they follow later, they can still have complete salvation.

Following the pattern of Korea, all mankind has the possibility of salvation because the appropriate conditions have been set up on the world level. On the foundation I just described, I could expand the blessing to the whole world. Therefore, in 1969, I picked 43 couples throughout the world for blessing. However, before blessing those couples I had to regain land for God, so in 1965, I established 120 Holy Grounds in 40 nations on my world tour. Without this foundation of the land, the people could not be connected. I brought dirt and stones from the Holy Ground in Korea and distributed them when I made Holy Ground around the world. God needs people and land in order to restore His sovereignty, and after gathering these together I could bless the 43 couples. With this foundation the heavenly families could be connected.

After establishing the required conditions, I could advance to my worldwide mission. In 1970, 777 couples were blessed. Time, people, conditions, and significant numbers were all

involved. The three sevens total 21. The world level international marriage candidates had to come to Korea, the land of faith. The previous international marriage laid the spiritual condition and gave these couples the right to come to Korea to be blessed. Everything is based on Principle.

After 1970, I ushered in the worldwide level dispensation, and in order to fulfill this the Korean blessed couples had to pay the indemnity price for the whole world. This is the reason that all the families were separated, with the wives going out to the witnessing field for three years beginning in 1970. This is the age of family indemnity. Many miserable situations occurred at that time; you cannot even imagine their course and the price they paid to save you people. They even left their children in orphanages because from God's point of view, His own children became orphans, separated from Him. The blessed children were purposely put in the position of suffering for three years. Those Korean couples had to leave the tradition that even when they left their children behind, those children respected and admired their parents' sacrifice. This condition of a period of suffering had to be gone through.

Through all this time I was preparing the exodus from Egypt to the worldwide Canaan, and on this foundation, I came to America on December 18, 1971, for my second visit. I received my permanent visa on April 30, 1973, and on that basis, I was ready to work in this country. Now it is five years since that day. In order to complete preparation to begin the mission in this country I undertook the Day of Hope campaigns and spoke in Europe, visiting many other countries as well. My work actually began in 1973, and in the following 3½ years we had the Madison Square Garden, Yankee Stadium and Washington Monument campaigns. My name had to become known around the world, focusing on September 18, 1976. In 1975, overseas missionaries were sent out to 120 countries, and we received worldwide persecution during the time of those great campaigns. However, anyone who persecuted our overseas missionaries set a bad condition before God. On September 18, 1976, we reached the climax, the final showdown between the True Parents and the nation of America.

On February 8, 1975, the blessing of 1,800 couples was held in Korea. Six is Satan's last number and 600 times 3 is 1,800. You have heard the prophecy about the number 666 in Revelations, so this blessing marks the end of Satan's dominion of that number. After the blessing, the IOWC was mobilized, gathering members from around the world to come to Japan and Korea and prepare the ground for the June 7 Rally for Korean Freedom. In that way we accomplished victory over Korea, with representatives from over 60 nations coming to the June 7 Rally.

The 1,800 couples blessing marked the completion of the blessing providence and now I can bless people anywhere and under any circumstances. Satan's accusation is completely removed from the blessing no matter where or when it may be given in the future. All the past rejection and opposition to group marriage is subsiding and no nation can oppose this activity again. In this way a new race has appeared. Without restoration of the family unit the world cannot be restored. That's



why I struggled so much to set up the condition for restoring the family unit. You have to restore the family in our movement, representing not only your family but the nation and the whole world.

Now in spirit world even the great world leaders from the past bow down before the blessed couples. This is the value of the families in the Unification Church. If you are blessed and then fail, your ancestry will be broken down, affecting seven generations. In spirit world it will not be Satan but your good ancestors who will accuse you. There is no way to escape this. If you fail in your mission of marriage, leaving to marry someone outside of our Church, then what will happen in spirit world? Your children will be treated worse than the most rejected orphans on earth.

The fall occurred at the top of the growth stage, but if you fail after the blessing it is after the perfection stage. For this there is no excuse; it is worse than Adam and Eve's fall. Even Satan will say, "You fell from the perfection stage while I only fell from the growth stage." Most criminals can be defended in court, but there is no way to protect this kind of criminal because this crime occurs in the perfection stage. This is a most formidable contract we have. All blessings are a contract between each couple, the True Parents and God. This is not my own idea.

Now I have entered the period when I can give blessing at any time, but the next blessing may be postponed until the end of the third seven-year course. This is because the blessing is so valuable, and I don't want to cheaply give something of such great value. After the victory of the 21-year course, shall we have a great celebration or not? To what extent? I am now planning the most powerful, extravagant, festive celebration never before seen in history.

You might look like you are miserable now, but from God's perspective you are making history. You may not realize your value, but it is enormous, even dreadful. After being here several years you may see only drudgery, but I can see how precious you are. Now the indemnity conditions have been paid—on the individual level, family level, national level and worldwide level. Now I can bless everyone. From now on the new era has been ushered in. Depending on the situation, of course, I am able to give the blessing whenever I want.

Why do you come to listen to me, wanting to be near and receive love from me? It is because I have accomplished these historical events and your soul is drawn to this. You are working very hard, but for whom? Even symbolically you must go the same indemnity road of the 6,000 years of restoration history. At the minimum you must go through a seven-year period of indemnity and suffering. Even after the blessing you have to work hard for three years as a condition. You must prepare to be qualified to be the world representatives of men and women.

Through suffering on the individual level, working hard and receiving persecution in the name of God and True Parents, perhaps as missionaries overseas, you can be worldwide men and women. You have to examine and test yourselves to see whether you belong to Satan, or whether you can be the channel to determine the fate of the nation, the world and God. You should not start married life if your mind is not ready according to this criterion. Are you ready to accept this

direction? Some sisters who are over 35 and are complaining inside, wondering when they will be blessed instead of worrying about the nation and world, do not belong here.

I can't blame people outside our Church for thinking Moon people, including me, are crazy. If you can't understand all of these things after listening for 1½ hours, how could they understand? If I didn't have the heavenly formula based on God's dispensation, I would be the craziest person in the whole world. Why should I have to receive persecution on top of doing all of this? Why should Satan gather all his power to destroy me? Only because he too knows the significance of what I am doing.

Do you know more than Satan does about the significance of this? If you know better than he does then Satan cannot touch you, but otherwise, he can take you to his side. Even if you forget all of the Divine Principle but you still cling to the True Parents as your True Parents and want to belong to them, then Satan can never claim you.

If Adam and Eve had obeyed God in the garden of Eden, then Satan could never have initiated the fall. If you belong to God and True Parents then Satan can't tempt you, even if you forget some of the Divine Principle. Would you drift away if I kicked you out? What if even President Carter beat you with a big stick? It is a very strange thing that if I hit someone, he is happy inside, exclaiming, "Father touched me!"

It is easier to be struck than to receive a reward for accomplishment because when I persecute you or chastise you, I have some reason to make a connection with you. Even if you are beaten, as sons and daughters you have a right to inherit what the parents have. You will inherit all of me, and at that scene Satan, and even God, cannot intervene in the love of father and children.

If you and your ancestors and your children become one in love and harmony centering on the True Parents, then the world will easily become the Kingdom of Heaven centering on divine love. The five races will be united into one. Do you think that's possible? You should keep this kind of proud thought and spirit from now on. If you carry the will of God and True Parents, then even if you die right now you will bring the Kingdom of Heaven.

You know what is taking place. If you believe in this and possess it inside, then God bless you.

*The 25th Year of the Unification Church 5-1-78*